

P A P E R S

RELATIVE TO

MILITARY OPERATIONS AGAINST THE REBEL NATIVES.

PRESENTED TO BOTH HOUSES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, BY COMMAND OF
HIS EXCELLENCY.

WELLINGTON.

—
1869.

SCHEDULE OF CORRESPONDENCE IN A.—No. 3.

Name of Writer.	To whom Addressed.	Date.	Page.
Mr. Booth ...	Major Noake ...	1st June, 1869 ...	53
Mr. H. T. Clarke ...	Mr. Cooper ...	26th March, 1869 ...	35
Same ...	Captain St. George ...	21st March, 1869 ...	38
Same ...	Same ...	22nd March, 1869 ...	39
Same ...	Same ...	25th March, 1869 ...	39
Same ...	Hon. Mr. Richmond ...	24th June, 1869 ...	71
Mr. G. S. Cooper ...	Lieut.-Colonel Harington ...	16th July, 1869 ...	71
Inspector Cumming ...	Colonel Whitmore ...	8th November, 1868 ...	11
Lieut.-Colonel Fraser ...	Same ...	9th June, 1869 ...	54
„ Gorton ...	Same ...	1st November, 1868 ...	5
„ Harington ...	Hon. Dr. Pollen ...	16th March, 1869 ...	31
Same ...	Mr. G. S. Cooper ...	16th July, 1869 ...	71, 72
Same ...	Hon. Defence Minister ...	6th August, 1869 ...	72
Captain Hawes ...	Lieut.-Colonel Lyon ...	24th April, 1869 ...	45
Major Herrick ...	Hon. Colonel Haultain ...	14th November, 1869 ...	11
Surgeon Hooper ...	Colonel Whitmore ...	14th March, 1869 ...	31
Lieutenant Hunter ...	Officer Commanding Camp, Patea ...	11th March, 1869 ...	29
Captain Kells ...	Major Noake ...	28th April, 1869 ...	45
Major Kemp ...	Colonel Whitmore ...	3rd February, 1869 ...	24
Colonel Lyon ...	Same ...	18th January, 1869 ...	20
Same ...	Hon. Colonel Haultain ...	26th April, 1869 ...	44
Same ...	Same ...	7th May, 1869 ...	47
Major Mair ...	Mr. H. T. Clarke ...	23rd March, 1869 ...	36
Sub-Inspector McDonnell ...	Lieut.-Colonel Gorton ...	... ..	5
Same ...	Colonel Whitmore ...	19th January, 1869 ...	21
Same ...	Same ...	19th February, 1869 ...	26
Sub-Inspector Newland ...	Same ...	27th November, 1868 ...	12
Major Noake... ..	Hon. Colonel Haultain ...	31st March, 1869 ...	39
Same ...	Same ...	11th April, 1869 ...	41
Same ...	Same ...	29th April, 1869 ...	45
Same ...	Same ...	2nd June, 1869 ...	52
Same ...	Same ...	23rd June, 1869 ...	55
Mr. Piercy ...	Mr. H. T. Clarke ...	15th March, 1869 ...	38
Sub-Inspector Roberts... ..	Colonel Whitmore ...	8th November, 1868 ...	11
Captain St. George (extract from diary) ...	... ..	15th June, 1869 ...	71
Same ...	Mr. H. T. Clarke ...	23rd March, 1869 ...	39
Lieut.-Colonel St. John ...	Colonel Whitmore ...	9th April, 1869 ...	40
Same ...	Same ...	9th May, 1869 ...	50
Same ...	Same ...	17th June, 1869 ...	71
Same ...	Mr. J. D. Ormond ...	16th July, 1869 ...	72
Colonel Whitmore ...	Hon. Colonel Haultain ...	23rd October, 1868 ...	3
Same ...	Same ...	2nd November, 1868 ...	4
Same ...	Same ...	6th November, 1868 ...	5
Same ...	Same ...	7th November, 1868 ...	6
Same ...	Same ...	17th November, 1868 ...	10
Same ...	Same ...	29th November, 1868 ...	11
Same ...	Same ...	2nd December, 1868 ...	12, 13
Same ...	Same ...	11th December, 1868 ...	14
Same ...	Same ...	18th December, 1868 ...	15
Same ...	Same ...	30th December, 1868 ...	16
Same ...	Same ...	5th January, 1869 ...	17
Same ...	Same ...	8th January, 1869 ...	19
Same ...	Same ...	22nd January, 1869 ...	20
Same ...	Same ...	27th January, 1869 ...	21
Same ...	Same ...	3rd February, 1869 ...	22, 23
Same ...	Same ...	6th February, 1869 ...	24
Same ...	Same ...	9th February, 1869 ...	25
Same ...	Same ...	19th February, 1869 ...	25
Same ...	Same ...	7th March, 1869 ...	27
Same ...	Same ...	10th March, 1869 ...	28
Same ...	Same ...	12th March, 1869 ...	28
Same ...	Same ...	14th March, 1869 ...	29
Same ...	Same ...	19th March, 1869 ...	32
Same ...	Same ...	21st March, 1869 ...	32
Same ...	Same ...	26th March, 1869 ...	33
Same ...	Same ...	8th April, 1869 ...	40
Same ...	Same ...	23rd April, 1869 ...	42
Same ...	Same ...	18th May, 1869 ...	48

PAPERS RELATIVE TO MILITARY OPERATIONS AGAINST THE REBEL NATIVES.

No. 1.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Patea, 23rd October, 1868.

I have the honor to report my arrival at this place, this morning at 10 a.m., with the whole of the Wanganui and Ngatiapa Natives (about 400 in all) now on pay, except fifty-one left in garrison at Weraroa.

I reached Wanganui on the 18th, and found that, in consequence of a report which, like many others I have lately received, proved to have no real foundation, Lieut.-Colonel Gorton had turned out the Wanganui Cavalry, and proceeded to Weraroa himself. I obtained horses and started in the same direction; but after riding twelve miles met Lieut.-Colonel Gorton coming back, and learned from him that he had moved the detachment under Sub-Inspector McDonnell from Weraroa to Nukumarū.

You will remember that you informed me that you had given Major Fraser orders to send thirty Europeans to Weraroa. These had not arrived; and I received from Lieut.-Colonel Gorton the enclosed letter showing the consequence on the Natives. I also ascertained that the Natives at Weraroa had been visited by Lieut.-Colonel McDonnell, and had been addressed by him on various political and other topics, but that they had not shown any disposition to give any serious trouble to the Government. I also am led to believe that the Wanganui Press has been busy suggesting that the Natives would not serve under my orders. The result, however, has shown that, notwithstanding the non-arrival of the thirty men promised from Patea,—notwithstanding the removal even of the twenty Europeans actually there, and in spite of my condition that fifty Natives should be left, an arrangement to which they were extremely averse,—the Natives at my first request marched to Patea, leaving a sufficient party to hold the Weraroa; and even showed me a letter from Lieut.-Colonel McDonnell which he had sent to them, a copy of which I hope to send you. It is not very directly objectionable, though extremely embarrassing to me.

But I anticipate. On the 18th I embarked in the "Woodpecker," and at 7 a.m. was off Waitotara, when the rising wind and sea compelled the captain to return. The 19th I spent at Wanganui. At 6 a.m. on the 20th I embarked again, and by 1 p.m., when the tide suited, I was no further than the day before, and the Captain had to return, reaching Wanganui at 10 p.m. with difficulty, and not without some danger, having shipped several seas which almost extinguished the fires, and striking on the bar fortunately just clear of the breakers. In the voyage of this day the steamer had been so much injured as to require repair; and as it appeared likely that some delay might occur, I determined to proceed on the 21st overland *via* Weraroa. The 21st proved a very wet day, and Mr. Booth, R.M., and I left town at 9 a.m., reaching Nukumarū at 2 p.m., and Weraroa at 3 p.m. Finding that if I remained the Natives would go on the next day, and would rather not give me an escort by Wairoa, I slept at Nukumarū, after addressing a few words to a meeting at Weraroa. At this meeting Mete Kingi replied to me, and urged a retreat to Wanganui, saying that that was all he had promised to the Parliament. I answered him very shortly that I looked to Kemp, not to him—that I left to Kemp the duty of selecting the men to remain and the party to go, and left the Natives to settle such details amongst themselves.

Kemp fixed that if the next day proved fine he would move—if not he would await fine weather. Next morning proved wet at first, and then cleared up. When, at 7 a.m., I got to Weraroa the Wanganuis had already started to get potatoes; so Kemp asked me as a favour not to go beyond the Waitotara Heads, at which point he would join me by night with all his men, except those he selected to remain at Weraroa. Though anxious to reach Patea, I thought it advisable to agree to this. A cattle escort had to be provided for, and till Kemp actually left Weraroa I could not decide whether the men he left required further support. At night I sent orders to Acting Sub-Inspector McDonnell to go to Weraroa with his twenty men and twelve others, recruits from Wanganui, whom I had caused to march by Nukumarū, to join the cattle party, which would have been met from Patea if the Natives had not gone on. On the 23rd, this day, I reached Patea. I very much regretted, on arrival, to receive the tidings I cannot but regard as disastrous of the evacuation of Kakaramea. The diminution of Major Fraser's force was his reason for that operation; and I very much fear that, not only in numbers but in *esprit*, the European force here is very much below what is desirable. I caused the Wellington Rifles to be paraded at 2 p.m., when I read their articles of agreement, and called for men who did not dispute their obligations. Some stepped on one side, and I am assured that by to-night (for I extended the time till then) every man worth keeping will have asked to be allowed to withdraw from any participation in the movement of the rest. I have put three men in confinement for a Court-martial.

I then fell in the Taranaki and Nelson men. These men deserved considerate treatment, and I gave it to them. While pointing out that I did not dispute their claim to discharge, I still told them I was sorry to lose them, and that the Government would be glad of their services in the Constabulary. I am not yet aware whether the greater proportion will stay or will go; but it is probable that many will stay.

The European Contingent is, I hear, infected, but I have not yet seen them. The remaining troops are staunch. Under these circumstances my force consists chiefly of Maoris, under very

indifferent control, with a chief who, I am sorry to perceive to-day, cannot be kept sober, and an officer (Captain Gudgeon) against whom they have all complained to me. The Armed Constabulary is very weak, but is reliable, and the men are behaving well. It is to be lamented that no recruits are arriving, for while this force has melted away Titokowaru has obtained many adherents, and has, I am credibly informed (by Captain Spiller), 800 men in the field. I cannot, of course, state what steps are in progress for obtaining men, but I shall send away a considerable number of utterly useless men, whose officers and non-commissioned officers state them to be wholly unreliable in the field, without delay. And I shall lose many Nelson and Taranaki men. Under these circumstances I beg to draw the serious attention of the Government to the position of this force, practically less than 250 Europeans and some 400 Maoris more or less useful, but liable at any moment to be influenced by any motive in their conduct, and with an enemy four times as strong as when the European force was three times as large as that now under my orders. Captain Spiller assures me there are 150 men in Nelson ready to serve; and in view of my discharging immediately, or being desirous of discharging as many, I shall send this officer to you for the purpose of carrying out the enlistment of the persons he believes he can obtain. The weather is so unfavourable that I cannot as yet reconnoitre, but I shall move with that view to-morrow if it is fine, and trust soon to be able to give you some better idea of the prospects of this force.

I have, &c.,
G. S. WHITMORE.

No. 2.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Patca, 2nd November, 1868.

I have the honor to inform you that I received this morning despatches, which I have no doubt were transmitted also to you, from Lieut.-Colonel Gorton, to the effect that Titokowaru had marched round my flank and taken up a position near Weraroa. At that post are at present thirty-five Europeans, under Acting Sub-Inspector C. McDonnell, and fifty friendly Kupapas. The escort of the Patea Yeomanry Cavalry, who brought me these despatches and your letter of the 28th ult., which I beg to acknowledge, informed me that a further force of Hauhaus was posted at the Waitotara Heads. Lieutenant Kenrick states that he saw their fires, having crossed at the usual ford, called Sherwood's, himself, at no great distance from them. I cannot help doubting the accuracy of this latter report; nevertheless it is clear that the Perekama Natives have gone over to the enemy, and that a large force of Hauhaus is in my rear, threatening Weraroa. Therefore I have decided to march with all the European force (70) I feel justified in withdrawing, with three days' rations, to Wairoa, and from that place I shall be in a position to move in such direction as may be required.

Lieut.-Colonel Gorton informs me that he is moving up the Wanganui Yeomanry Cavalry and the 1st Class Militia. I trust that these forces may prove trustworthy.

The Natives accompany me, but as Kemp insisted on their being paid before they left, I hardly expect them to move to-night. They left this place last night, and scouted towards Taranaki and Putahi, so they are tired, and, owing to their being paid, they will get no sleep.

I enclose you a copy of Lieut.-Colonel Gorton's despatch herewith.

The Hauhaus have certainly evacuated this part of the country, but as this may only be a ruse on their part, I feel compelled to leave the bulk of my available force behind me.

I regret that the "Rangatira" has brought me no reinforcements. I also deem it my duty to say that, with the exception of the Armed Constabulary, two-thirds of the Europeans on pay here are utterly useless for any purpose whatever, and that it is simply a waste of money to continue them on pay. I allude to the bulk of the temporary corps (Patea Rifle Volunteers and European Contingent), who not only are of no use themselves, but give endless trouble to others, and require many otherwise available men to guard them in confinement, or to tend them in hospital. Among the Patea Rifle Volunteers there are many good men, and the worthless might be to some extent overlooked in a local corps; but as regards the European Contingent, in which very few men worth keeping are to be found, and which is in a state of disaffection, my own opinion is that as soon as recruits come up all the worthless ones should be discharged,—they add nothing to our strength, and a great deal to our embarrassments.

I cannot conclude this hurried despatch without entreating the Government to use every effort to send up the recruits who for so many weeks have been on pay at Auckland and elsewhere. Their presence at this moment is of the last consequence, for I feel quite certain that the Maoris will not return to Patea, and to make the least use of their very expensive services I shall be compelled, when I fall in with Titokowaru, to attack him at whatever risk or odds; and if in doing so I meet with reverse I cannot help it, for I can only say that it appears to me to be the only course to take, for either in that event, or if the Natives desert, now that recruits are not here at the last minute we can dispense with them, the district must irretrievably be lost. The Government must be aware that I gave this opinion six weeks ago; that I then pressed the hastening of proper recruits; that when I left Wellington you informed me that the "Rangatira" had orders to bring them; and they may judge of the regret and disappointment with which I have learned that not one man has arrived.

I have no wish to speak reproachfully or disrespectfully to the Government—I hardly know whether I may seem to do so, feeling so keenly as I do that what, three weeks ago, would have been enough, and might even now save the district, three weeks hence would be utterly insufficient. Associated with the Maori force (kept together with so much difficulty at the planting season) 500 Europeans would, if they were tolerable good, have swept Titokowaru out of this part of the country. Without Kupapas, and after he has gained the Perekamas and further allies, 1,500 will not do it. Moreover, the removal of the "Sturt," when she is really necessary to take away the ammunition, guns, &c., if we have to abandon Patea (or fight for it, with no other alternative in case of defeat),

when she might have been so useful in bringing up the recruits, seems to me to be a most unfortunate, if not disastrous necessity.

What may now result depends upon whether Titokowaru means to attack Patea when I am gone. If he does not, and the Maoris will continue to serve, it is possible that one successful blow may replace us in a favourable position, whether struck at Weraroa or anywhere else. If he does attack Patea, the force, including all the civilians, is weak to hold it.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,
G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

Enclosure in No. 2.

Copy of a Letter from Lieut.-Colonel GORTON to Colonel WHITMORE.

(No. 807.)

SIR,—

Militia Office, Wanganui, 1st November, 1868.

I have the honor to inform you a messenger arrived about two hours and a half ago, bringing me a despatch from Acting Sub-Inspector McDonnell, from Weraroa, copy of which I annex. That despatch states that the rebels are within a quarter of a mile of Weraroa, and that the Natives at Perekama have gone over to the enemy, and that Acting Sub-Inspector McDonnell expected an attack at any moment.

A Native, Hoani Brown, also came in to-day from Weraroa, and informed Mr. Parris (who is here waiting to go to Patea) and myself, that two Europeans from the Waitotara District—he did not know who, and did not know from whence they came—arrived at Weraroa this morning just about cock-crowing, and reported that a Native named Timiti had told them that Titokowaru had sent a force to Perekama, seized all the people, and taken them away.

One of the Kupapas, Horima, went down to Perekama. He found one Native there from Papatipu, who told him that all the Perekama Natives had gone to Papatipu, and were now there with some of Titokowaru's Natives and Natives of the place. Just as this Native messenger was leaving, Horima requested him to tell the people not to move about in a small force, more especially with carts conveying supplies.

I am sending Lieutenant Kenrick back with his escort to convey this despatch to you.

At 12 o'clock I am parading the Wanganui Cavalry Volunteers, and intend sending them out to Weraroa under the command of Captain Noake, with orders to patrol the district on their way.

I have given orders for the first-class Militia to parade at 2 o'clock, and shall march with them to Weraroa, to temporarily strengthen that position, and to escort provisions which are leaving to-day. I shall not arrive there, I am afraid, before to-morrow morning. The post at Weraroa has only sufficient rations to last them till to-morrow night. I have therefore taken these steps as a precautionary measure until I get instructions from you.

It would appear from this information, if correct, that Titokowaru's intentions are to harass the district on this side of the Waitotara River.

I have, &c.,
EDWARD GORTON,
Lieut.-Colonel:

Colonel Whitmore.

P.S.—I don't expect to get more than fifty Militiamen.

Sub-Enclosure to Enclosure in No. 2.

Copy of a Letter from Sub-Inspector McDONNELL to Lieut.-Colonel GORTON.

SIR,—

Weraroa Redoubt, Sunday morning.

I have the honor to inform you that the Hauhaus are within a quarter of a mile of here, and I expect to be attacked every moment. I can only say that we are quite ready for them, and only hope they will attack us. At this moment the whole of the Perekama Natives have bolted to the enemy. We are sure to be attacked this day.

I have no time to write you any further, as I must get the messenger off at once before the roads are closed. I can only say you can depend upon myself and my men to the last extremity.

Lieut.-Colonel Gorton,
Commanding Wanganui Militia District.

I have, &c.,
COLL McDONNELL,
Acting Sub-Inspector A.C.

P.S.—I do not know the number of the enemy, but they must be in force.

C. McD.

No. 3.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Patea, 6th November, 1868.

On the morning of the 6th I returned to Wairoa from Patea, to which I had gone overnight, on a report that the "Sturt" had arrived. Mr. Parris accompanied me. Towards afternoon the alarm was raised in camp owing to an attack made on the recruits marching up under Sub-Inspector Roberts. The whole of the Maoris turned out, and Kemp had to go to try to bring them back, while I moved up the Constabulary in support. A running fight to Ngamotu ensued, with a great deal of Maori firing, and it was difficult to draw off the force. However before dark I succeeded in this, and a few of the Hauhaus made a show of following up. Mr. Williams of Patea, with Winiata and Te Moro, laid in ambush for the pursuers, and shot one of the front ones, which checked them; and though a great deal of powder was consumed, there was no further real fighting. On returning I examined the recruits, and finding the great bulk to be fine men, with some knowledge of military duties,

I ordered Sub-Inspector Roberts to select any it would not be safe to take, and to march with the rest at daybreak in support of the column. These men had with great spirit marched from Kai-Iwi at daylight, and crossing the Waitotara at noon, reached my bivouac at 2 p.m.

I explained to the men the necessity which compelled me to ask for further exertions so soon, and they thanked me for giving them so early an opportunity of trial. In order to give them as much rest as possible, I ordered them to march the last of the several columns, when I detailed the troops for the movement against the enemy.

During the day I issued orders for the march of the whole force at various hours, so that they should not interfere with one another; but the advanced column, guided by Captain Hawes himself, was to be accompanied by Captain Kemp, and twenty selected Natives and the Maoris of No. 1 Division, Armed Constabulary.

I have to acknowledge your various despatches of the 2nd instant, and up to that date.

I have to call your attention to the extreme energy and promptitude of every person connected with the bringing up of the new division. It has been excellently recruited, and the men are good. It has been kept in excellent order on the journey by Sub-Inspector Roberts, and was brought on by him in the most spirited manner. It was pushed on by Lieut.-Colonel Gorton with his usual promptitude and despatch, and arrived in excellent spirits and order, though it marched that day from Kai-Iwi, and forded the Waitotara. I have never seen a finer body of men.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 4.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Wairoa, 7th November, 1868.

In continuation of my former despatches, I have the honor to inform you that the whole available force under my command marched this morning from my bivouac at this place, at 1, 2, and 3 o'clock a.m., with excellent guides, provided by Captain Hawes from the actual residents, he himself guiding the advanced party. This latter was composed of the Wairoa Rifles, the A.C. Natives, and 20 picked Natives under the chief Kemp. The Kupapas were ordered to follow the advanced party, but, whether on account of a light rain that was falling or not, they did not do so. They, however, promised to come when I caused them to be roused, and I moved off myself with the Patea Rifles, Nos. 1, 2, and 3 A.C., and the Patea Yeomanry Cavalry dismounted. No. 6 Division, A.C., having been carefully inspected by Captain Roberts, and the wholly untrained and footsore men left behind, marched from Wairoa as an escort for the reserve ammunition at daylight. All these columns met by 4 a.m., or thereabouts. It was now light, but I could neither see any Natives coming, nor had any number of them come up, though a few were there under young Aperahama. The bulk of the force under my orders were Maori Kupapas. I am not able to speak their language, and am but indifferently versed in the Maori mode of forming an opinion, so I specially asked Messrs. Parris and Booth to ascertain the disposition of the whole contingent, and they were satisfied that they would fight. Their delay was embarrassing to me, and I at first resolved to go back; but as Aperahama told me that 100 Kupapas, relying on my carrying out my arrangements, had gone by the dray road, and would be left in the lurch, and as Mr. McDonnell told me that all the party present meant and wished to fight, and that many others would soon overtake me, I decided to push on and take Moturoa, which, from my information, was not likely to be held in force. If the absent Kupapas did not then appear, I told Kemp I should not enter the forest track to Okutuku, but confine myself to what I believed we were then strong enough to accomplish. Apparently up to this point the enemy had not discovered our approach; indeed I have grave suspicions that he was accurately informed of my intentions, and took no trouble to keep any sentries at all. I advanced at length cautiously, and at the entrance to the scrub by the dray track I halted and sent on scouts. At a distance of 600 yards, on a commanding elevation, I left the Wairoa Rifles under Mr. Middlemas. They were ordered to throw up a small redoubt, and to protect the reserve ammunition, which they did. Having allowed the scouts to proceed some way, I cautiously entered the scrub. I knew the ground from the description of many of the Wairoa settlers, and I was accompanied by Captain Hawes, whose own property adjoined the block now occupied by the Hauhaus. I enclose a sketch map to illustrate the events of the day, which I hope will supply any imperfections in my description.

The position of Moturoa when attacked by General Chute was not in any way defended by fortification, and it was then held by the inhabitants of the place only. When last seen by Captain Hawes there was no enclosure. The kainga is on a very large clearing, which is perfectly bare; it is close under the slope, covered with dense forest, up which the road leads to Okutuku. The approach to the open ground passes through a belt of long fern and Koromiko scrub, by a broad dray track. This belt of scrub is again shut in on either flank by forest, and has been a clearing at some time.

Having proceeded about half-way through the scrub the scouts with Kemp returned, and reported that they had seen the kainga (I had myself also just seen it); that it was palisaded; that we had not been perceived, and that we might endeavour to surprise and carry it by a rush without any unreasonable danger. Kemp suggested a plan, and undertook the execution of the most important, because the most difficult part. I supplemented it by one or two additional precautions, all of which proved of value. Kemp's plan was to strike into the forest with such of his men as he could get to follow him, on the right flank supported by Europeans, and to creep up close to the kainga to its left rear. I was to advance by the road the way I was expected, and as soon as I was perceived, Kemp's party was to open fire on the place, while I assaulted it. I added the ordinary precaution of supports and reserves, and on my left flank extended a party to prevent that road being left open to them in case they designed to turn it. I may here say that the kainga was surrounded by an oblong palisade with one gate (as it proved) only to the rear. The palisades were new, and neatly put up, but in no way different, I think, to ordinary kainga palings, except that they appeared to be of uniform height. I hear from some that

it was rifle-pitted, and it may be so, but I did not perceive this, and the fire came from the middle of the palisade as often as from the level of the ground.

I halted to give Kemp time for one hour, when I heard the dogs begin to bark furiously, and being afraid that Kemp's party might be cut off, I resolved to advance. His party was formed of No. 1 Division, A.C., under Sub-Inspector Goring, and some fifty Natives who formed the whole Kupapa force in the field, except about a dozen who were behind at the entrance to the scrub. I now warned the officers and men to their several posts. Major Hunter, who had been present with me when I fixed my plans, and who had expressed an earnest wish to be allowed to take charge of the storming party, I told off to that duty, with No. 3 Division, A.C., the Patea Rifles, and the Patea Yeomanry Cavalry dismounted. No. 6 Division I detailed to remain in support, and requested Inspector Cumming to place Sub-Inspector McDonnell with No. 2 on a track leading to the left, which I thought might be used against us unless it was held. I then ordered the advance, and Major Hunter sprang to the front, cheering on his men, gallantly seconded by Captain Gilling, of the Patea Rifle Volunteers. The enemy opened a smart fire upon us, but the open space we traversed without loss, chiefly because the fire was kept down by the flanking party and supports. When Major Hunter reached the work he found the entrance was in rear, and led his men round the work, partly to clear the way for the fire of Kemp's party, and partly perhaps to give his men all the concealment he could. Major Hunter entered the bush in passing the work. He was abreast of the gate at a very short distance, and some of the Hauhaus were already leaving the place, when they were obliged to run back for shelter from our fire. At this moment Kepa, a Native of No. 1 Division, ran up to the palisades and looked over them; in doing so he was shot through the shoulder and left the field, returning to Wairoa with a report that the kainga had been taken. For a few minutes it appeared to be so, but just now a fire was opened on Major Hunter from the bush, and he was himself mortally wounded. The few men actually with him had as much as they could do to bring him out of the bush; and a very gallant fellow, mounted constable Kelly, was also struck down; nevertheless the stormers, though assailed by overpowering odds, held out stoutly, covering those who were carrying out their officer and their comrade. The Natives of the chief Kemp, and No. 1 Division Armed Constabulary, supported them, and the two wounded men were slowly brought out of the place towards the rear. The Hauhaus became furious at thus seeing their prey escape them, and fired heavily upon the troops; but they were met by equal determination and a very heavy fire, for almost every man in the force under my orders was so posted as to be able to fire effectively, and having spare ammunition at the earthwork outside the bush, and packhorses to bring it up, there was no occasion to husband our cartridges. The wounded were being extricated painfully, for the stretchers had not yet come up; but the fortitude of our men was unshaken, and they returned more than they were receiving. The Natives must have been crowded too, and though as yet we cannot say what their loss was, I am sanguine that it was severe. Kemp's few Natives behaved admirably, undismayed by the continual arrival of reinforcements to the enemy, or the fact of our having lost an officer. I was present myself on this part of the field, and visited all the positions of the force, and it must be satisfactory to the Government to know how staunch our men were even under the trying circumstances of having to take out their wounded under so galling a fire without stretchers, and in face of a very superior force. To prevent the enemy turning our flank, we refused our right, and gradually showed a front towards the kainga and towards Okutuku. Now when relief was wanted and stretchers urgently needed, our men were cheered by seeing No. 6, led by Sub-Inspector Roberts, arrive on the ground at a double. They came up in single file, with their distance sufficiently maintained to halt and front the enemy a few yards in front of our position, in skirmishing order, and they brought up stretchers to carry off the wounded. Sub-Inspector Roberts had very judiciously left one section behind to reinforce No. 2, and Inspector Cumming moved up this force to occupy the left of the dray road, close to the open ground. Thus the fire upon the front of the kainga was still maintained, and at the immediate front our force was strengthened. After giving time for the removal of the wounded, I now withdrew No. 1 by the bush track, unseen by the enemy, and re-formed it in support of No. 2. In the same manner the storming party withdrew to the rear of No. 1. Lastly, No. 6, with a constancy and firmness beyond all praise, when their recent organization and previous exertions are remembered, retired, fighting slowly but steadily, still covered by the other troops. Kemp drew off his Natives in the same way, and much about the same time; but he diverged to the proper left, so as to lean upon Inspector Cumming and Sub-Inspector McDonnell, whom he then joined, and, ultimately, was with the last who left the scrub.

Meanwhile these operations, carried out with perfect regularity, had given time to the wounded to reach the redoubt which Mr. Middlemas and the Wairoa Rifles had constructed, where they were dressed, and from which they were sent on towards Wairoa, under an escort.

The force having at length been safely withdrawn, I inquired from all the officers I could see if their men were all present, and was informed that they were sure all the dead and wounded were brought off. I made similar inquiries of the men, and one man told me that he thought some men—or one at least—had been left. Accordingly I sent back twice, and returned myself; but as nobody was discovered, and as the men seemed confident that all their comrades had been brought off, I felt no longer any hesitation in retiring under cover of the redoubt. The circumstance that some men had not been brought off has since become known to us, yet I cannot satisfactorily ascertain where these men fell. The officers could not tell except from what they saw or their men told them, because nobody exactly knew who had carried off the wounded or who the wounded were—some had walked out, others had been assisted out of the scrub. But it has been a bitter disappointment to the men who suffered the greater part of their loss in extricating the wounded, and who voluntarily on many occasions returned towards the enemy on the report, often unfounded, that men were left behind. All the time of the retreat the men were extended, and each man took cover and laid down. The enemy pressed us very hard, dashing in with tomahawks whenever men fell, but recoiling always from the determined front shown him, and the terrible rapidity with which the breach-loaders enabled our men to fire. On these occasions, which were many along our whole front, the men stood up and fired volley after volley, such as I never before heard in bush fighting. Their resolution may be judged from the fact that the enemy had once seized a man and were tomahawking him, when the men rushed back and rescued him. He is savagely

wounded, but has not one gunshot wound about him. The Hauhaus tried to run in upon our men to do this sort of thing several times, but in no instance but this succeeded.

In carrying off the wounded the officers set a bright example to the men: I saw Captain Newland himself, with one or two men, carry poor Major Hunter and Constable Kelly from the spot where they fell, and where, but for their prompt action, in another moment they would have been tomahawked. The officers, however, never passed to the rear farther than in carrying the wounded—they held the post of danger. If I can say that the men behaved excellently, maintained their discipline, and were from first to last determined to do their duty, I must do the officers the justice to say that their exertions were conspicuous even among brave men. It is not necessary for me to say more on this subject, for you will easily understand that where all did their duty in their several stations, I do not wish to draw distinctions of this kind. Of the eighty Kupapas, only fifty with the chief Kemp, whose gallantry, whose coolness, and whose determination to hold if possible the post of honor was evident throughout the day, behaved like men. These fifty were not his own peculiar hapu—they were a medley of all hapus composing the Kupapas. If Kemp had had even 100 more Natives, the kainga not only must have been taken, but it is possible I might after that success have carried Okutuku.

Having drawn off my men, and begun an orderly retreat by alternate divisions, one of their own chiefs suggested to me that as there were Maoris at the redoubt and further back, it would be desirable that they should relieve my men. I consented to this, and he went to the redoubt and addressed his people. Unluckily a long shot mortally wounded him while he was speaking; when Kemp, who was on the parapet, called Puckey, one of his men, and they bore their countryman from the field, and the Europeans, as in other instances, carried him for them when they were exhausted. Kemp's behaviour throughout was beyond all praise—he uniformly supported me, and made his people carry out my orders to the best of his ability; and had he known that one European was missing, would have gone back at the last moment to fetch him, or (as it seemed to me) to die.

When we passed the redoubt a few Hauhaus came out and occupied it, but I had already extended a party to reply to their fire on the next hill, and, as we marched, dropped companies on each low range to cover the retreat of the rear guard, so, though there was some noise, there was no harm done on our side till we reached Wairoa. At about a mile off, a hundred Hauhaus perhaps, scattered along the brow, and fired long shots, which could not reach, probably out of bravado. When this had gone on for a short time I had one of the guns run out, and fired a few shell among them, which presently dispersed them.

The enemy was in great force. He could not have brought up less than 500 or 600 men against us. He showed in numbers, and was disposed to close at several points at once. He attacked No. 2, and section of No. 6, on the left, while he was swarming down on No. 6 and Kemp's Natives, and while thus employed pushed forward a large number to the dray road. Here at first they were taken for Kupapas; but Sergeant Blake (Volunteer attached to A.C.), finding that a man named Kohiri (well known here) was in advance leading them, undeceived our people, and a sharp volley at close quarters drove them back. Though less prominently placed than other divisions, No. 2, and the left section of No. 6, did excellent service, and as they fired at close quarters from concealment on the enemy in almost open ground, it is probable that their fire was about the most destructive. But the rapidity of fire of our men, who were quite cool and never fired during the retreat, except when pressed, or when they saw the enemy close to them, must have been very fatal.

When we first got up to the palisade we all heard the women crying inside, and as it appeared to me to give no protection to its defenders except concealment, and as 200 rifles were fired into it from two sides at easy range for an hour, and it was full of men, I am sure there must have been many casualties inside. Kepa, who looked inside, and was shot in doing so (he is doing well, I am glad to say), saw four dead men lying together in a heap, partly covered with a mat, and this was within five minutes of the beginning. I believe they were too many for their style of war. They were exposed to a fire on three sides all day, for every man of ours for the first half-hour had an opportunity of delivering his fire from concealment quite as good as that of the enemy, while they were collected in a comparatively small space in and behind the palisade. Afterwards as we retired we had a much wider front than he had, and, except the supports, all the men could see and fire as well as he could. Not having won the ground, I cannot of course do more than conjecture from my own experience and observation, but I never heard quicker volleys, and these were delivered in no wanton manner, but only when a rush was attempted or the enemy showed out in force.

Kemp and his Natives, who have won the admiration of all ranks, are quite as much charmed with our fighting, and indeed from first to last not one person in the force can be blamed for his part of the whole. All obeyed my orders as accurately, and when obliged acted for themselves on momentary emergencies, as if all were old veterans. If there be any blame for our failure it rests all upon me, unless it be considered by the Government that I had a full right to expect the co-operation of the Natives; once committed, I had no choice but to proceed. The road by which I advanced is a track not used by the Natives, but which the settlers had lately found out. I never again could have used it if I had turned back. If I had halted outside the bush the approaches would have been lined, and I could not have got so far unmolested. Moreover, the reinforcements which Moturoa might get at any moment after the first quarter of an hour compelled me to lose no time in attacking. The arrangements made enabled us to reach the kainga without the loss of a man in crossing the open, and between the first shot and our doing so very few minutes elapsed. Again, if I had held the ground outside, the party believed to be on my right co-operating (which never came up, I may observe) would have been cut off, and our prestige here lost by returning when in sight of the enemy. Moreover, it is to be questioned if I had waited for the party of Natives I have mentioned outside the bush, and then returned, whether I might not have been drawn into a worse bush and more hopeless position than that of Moturoa. On the whole, I feel quite sure I had no choice, and that I had a very fair chance of success and nearly achieved it. Grieved as the men are at the loss of Major Hunter, sadly as they think of their missing comrades, I am happy to be able to state that their courage is high, their discipline wholly unimpaired, if not improved, and that they may be absolutely depended on when raised to something like equality with the enemy in point of numbers. And I do earnestly entreat the Government—whatever view

they may take personally of my share in these operations—to attach no blame to the men or officers for the unhappy accident of leaving their comrades so unwittingly behind. I shall furnish what explanations can be obtained for me as soon as possible, and have called on the officers who reported all their men present to explain. But no man was left on purpose, or to the knowledge of myself or any one I asked.

In conclusion, I beg to assure the Government that the Natives with us, if not treacherous, are too cowardly to be trusted, and to point out that until, by weakening the posts, the enemy can be confronted by his own number—which I take it was not exaggerated in the first report I got—of suitable Europeans, it cannot be expected that he can be prevented from going where he likes, or going when he pleases. Men who try to run in upon armed Englishmen with tomahawks, who will fight as the Hauhaus fight now, and shoot as well, will before long face us anywhere, while nowhere can I show a front of 300 men. The same pay as has so unworthily been drawn by the Kupapas, would supply all our wants, and I am assured there are men enough to be got. The spirit of this force now is excellent, the men cheerfully accommodate themselves to bivouac life, and nothing but training and numbers are wanting.

I must now reluctantly allude, because it is with so much grief that my thoughts recur to the death of the gallant Major Hunter. This brave officer, whose career has been so long before the country, who was so efficient in the everyday duties of his profession, and so prominent before the enemy, fell, as I believed, and he doubtless thought in a moment of victory, when the loss of his brother, two months before, and of so many other gallant fellows was about to be avenged. The Constabulary can boast no better officer, the Colonial service no braver than Major Hunter; and the gallant manner in which he sprang forward before his division and led them to the assault will never be forgotten by me, nor the whole force in presence of which it occurred. Happily all saw how an officer should lead his men, and the other officers proved themselves worthy of the example. In falling as he has done, Major Hunter has left behind him an illustrious name in our Colonial history, and will be followed to the grave by the regrets of all the Colonial forces.

I have to acknowledge the great assistance I received from all the officers present, and in mentioning individuals I beg it may not be supposed that those not mentioned were at all remiss in their duties. Simply, some were responsible for certain movements, and these assisted me materially—to others the opportunity did not occur. I beg therefore to express my obligations to Sub-Inspector Newland, Armed Constabulary, who succeeded to the command of the force, and who behaved splendidly; Sub-Inspector Goring, who set an excellent example also to his men, and led No. 1, with Kemp's Natives, round by the bush to the left rear of the kainga; Sub-Inspector McDonnell, who did his duty well with No. 2, and gallantly brought up the rear; Sub-Inspector Roberts, whose conduct throughout this trying day, whose command over his men, whose example to them, have all been a credit to the Colonial service; Captain Gilling, commanding Patea Rifle Volunteers, who behaved splendidly himself, and whose men behaved excellently also; Captain O'Halloran, who commanded the Patea Yeomanry Cavalry, and behaved as an officer should do himself in all respects, and whose men did so also; Captain Hawes, commanding Wairoa Rifle Volunteers, who gave me great assistance in every way; Dr. Brown, medical officer in charge, who took so much pains with the wounded, and who carried out his duties gallantly and efficiently; Captain Gudgeon and Mr. E. McDonnell, who, though unable to bring on their men, followed Kemp to the field, and shared the honor which he has won; Inspector Cumming, the District Adjutant, who afforded me all the assistance in his power, and took charge of No. 2 Armed Constabulary, and parts of No. 6; Mr. Forster, who was of assistance to me in many ways; lastly, Captain Kemp,—brave, modest, and generous in all his conduct on this occasion, who never boasted before the fight, who has cast no reproaches after it, who has shown every officer that he is endued with great capacity for military operations, who has exhibited to every man of the force that a Maori chief can manifest a calm deliberate courage in no way inferior to their own, who has laid up for himself in the hearts of many of the force the gratitude of men who received a comrade's help in the moment of need, and who has tried hard to redeem the forfeited reputation of his tribe. This officer and chief merits a full recognition on my part of his deserts. I must not omit to mention the great assistance rendered to me on all occasions by Mr. Booth, R.M., and Mr. Parris, who specially came up to assist me.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel,
Commanding Patea Field Forces.

CASUALTY RETURN of KILLED, WOUNDED, and MISSING, in the Action of the 7th November, 1868, at Moturoa:—

Officers Killed and Wounded.

					Killed.	Wounded.
Armed Constabulary	...	...	...	...	1*	0

Non-commissioned Officers and Men Killed and Wounded.

Armed Constabulary	...	...	...	...	7	14
Patea Rifle Volunteers	...	...	...	...	1	0
Native Contingent	...	...	...	...	0	5
Total	...	...	...	...	8	19

Non-commissioned Officers and Men Missing.

Armed Constabulary	...	...	...	...	...	6
Patea Rifle Volunteers	...	...	...	...	...	1
Patea Yeomanry Cavalry	...	...	...	...	...	1
Total	...	...	...	...	...	8

* Major Hunter.

<i>Summary.</i>						Killed.	Wounded.	Missing.
Officers	...	...	...	...	...	1	0	0
Non-commissioned Officers and Men	...	...	...	...	...	8	19†	8
Total						9	19	8

No. 5.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Wanganui, 17th November, 1868.

Herewith I have the honor to forward to you a list of the casualties which occurred in the late action at Moturoa. They are slightly in excess of what I formerly, and before I had had time to receive detailed reports, informed you to be the number. I also append the explanations given me by the officers who had led me to believe, when I drew the troops from the bush, that all our men had been brought off. I have been unable to obtain the explanation of Captain Gilling as he is at Patea, and I am unable to state whether he has since been able to inform himself by inquiry on this subject.

I have endeavoured to ascertain the fate of these missing men, without satisfactory result. But three are now positively stated to have been killed. One of these was a wounded man, who, while being carried to the rear, was shot through the head by the enemy, and the same volley having badly wounded one of the bearers, the stretcher party left the dead, and brought off the wounded man. One other man is supposed to have absconded previous to the engagement, on grounds of some probability. Two others, it appears, are known to have been killed. If the rest were, as is possible, lost in the bush, having wandered away from their comrades, the fact of the removal of the enemy, consequent, probably on that of the troops, and the proximity of the Wairoa redoubt, which is very conspicuous, together with the circumstance that so many dray roads lead in that direction, afford hope that some of the missing may yet return. One unwounded man, owing to these circumstances has returned, and as the men had rations with them, there are still hopes as I have not moved lately in that direction, and their road is clear that others may have escaped.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

CASUALTY RETURN of the KILLED, WOUNDED, and MISSING of the COLONIAL FORCES at the Action, of the 7th November, 1868, at Moturoa.

<i>Killed.</i>		
Inspector Hunter	...	Armed Constabulary ... No. 3 Division.
Constable J. Path	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ C. Lees	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ G. Satler	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
Private S. Brewer	...	Patea Rifles ... Ditto.
<i>Wounded.</i>		
Constable J. Lynder	...	Armed Constabulary ... No. 1 Division.
„ Kepa	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ Cecil Foote	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ J. McDowell	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ Jas. Kelly	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ W. Keane	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ W. Vance	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ G. Cole	...	Ditto ... No. 6 Division.
„ D. Dolan	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ C. Eastwood	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ G. B. Monk	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ C. M. G. Thompson	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ A. Welsley	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ J. Williams	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ J. Cooksley	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
Anita	...	Maori Kupapa. (Since dead.)
Four others—names unknown to me. (Since dead.)		
<i>Missing.</i>		
Constable Norman	...	Armed Constabulary ... No. 2 Division.
„ Jos. Savage	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ Nogus	...	Ditto ... No. 3 Division.
„ Wm. Nicholls	...	Ditto ... Ditto. Killed.
„ D. Urquhart	...	Ditto ... Ditto. Killed.
Sergeant Kirwan	...	Ditto ... No. 6 Division.
Constable R. Thompson	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
„ T. Poole	...	Ditto ... Ditto.
Private J. Devon	...	Patea Y. Cavalry ...
Corporal Stockfish	...	Patea Rifles ...
„ Kenally	...	Ditto ...

Killed, 5; Wounded, 20; Missing, 11—of whom 3 are now found to have been killed, and 1 is believed to have absconded before the action commenced. Casualties, 36.

† Including slight wounds.

Enclosure 1 in No. 5.

Copy of a Letter from Inspector CUMMING to Colonel WHITMORE.

SIR,—

Camp, Patea, 8th November 1868.

With reference to your inquiry as to the missing men of the force under your command at the engagement yesterday, I have the honor to state that No. 2 Division, A.C., with whom I remained during the principal part of the action, were immediately under my observation. During that time I was frequently along the ground they were holding. I saw no one of them wounded, nor was any reported after the right retired. I gave the order for No. 2 to retire steadily firing, and accompanied them. We were in extended order in the scrub, and it was then I fear the two men of No. 2 Division, A.C., must have fallen unseen by me or any of their comrades; no cry was however heard, nor were the men missed till the roll was called on our return to Wairoa. I have made every inquiry amongst the non-commissioned officers and men of the division, but none of them can state when or how the missing men were lost.

Colonel Whitmore,
Commanding Patea Field Force.

I have, &c.,

GEO. J. CUMMING, Inspector, A.C.,
Adjutant, Patea District.

Enclosure 2 in No. 5.

Copy of a Letter from Sub-Inspector ROBERTS to Colonel WHITMORE.

SIR,—

Patea, 8th November, 1868.

I have the honor to report, with reference to your inquiries about the missing men, that there were no dead or wounded left upon the field to my knowledge, the men of their own accord taking the dead and wounded to the rear with the utmost coolness and discipline.

I am now at a loss to account for those who are missing.

Colonel Whitmore,
Commanding Patea Field Force.

I have, &c.,

J. M. ROBERTS,
Sub-Inspector, No. 6 Division, A.C.

No. 6.

Copy of a Letter from Major HERRICK to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Nukumarū, 14th November, 1869.

I have the honor to inform you, by direction of the Colonel Commanding the Field Force, that the enemy were heard to salute this morning at Weraroa, and they have since burnt down Mr. Handley's house at Nukumarū. The Colonel has sent out the Cavalry, under command of Captain Newland, supported by No. 3 Division A.C., with two mounted orderlies to be sent back in case of requiring aid. The cavalry were last seen, apparently in full pursuit, galloping along the sandhills, but as the mounted orderlies have not come back, it does not appear that anything is wrong. No. 2 Division is ready to start at once if required.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,

JASPER L. HERRICK,
Brigade Major.

No. 7.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters,
Woodall's Redoubt, 29th November, 1868.

I have the honor to enclose herewith the report of Captain and Sub-Inspector Newland of a march and successful affair which he conducted with a Cavalry column yesterday.

The bulk of the Cavalry were settlers belonging to the Kai Iwi and Wanganui Cavalry; and it will be very satisfactory to the Government, and to the inhabitants of this district, to learn how well they behaved on this occasion. The objects of this movement I explained to you while you were here, but being a double one I am gratified that both were fulfilled. I learn from Wairoa that all is well—that there are forty-two days' biscuit in store, together with rations for a longer period of all other stores except meat, of which, owing to the accidental loss of part of their sheep, worried by dogs, and that of a considerable portion of the salt meat which proved to be bad, only nine days' supply remains.

I had hoped to obtain a list of the arms left at Wairoa after the affair at Moturoa, to complete the return of losses at that engagement, but as the arms of the wounded appear to be packed up, Captain Hawes, for some unexplained reason, did not examine them. However, he has sent me a list by which I find that a few arms are in store at that station, left by the troops without any directions about them, being probably those of the men killed.

The Cavalry affair of yesterday was conducted on a principle which can only be applied once successfully at the same place; but I have another plan by which, before I ultimately advance, should the enemy not meanwhile attack me, I trust to obtain another partial success.

I propose using the Cavalry as a decoy; as the enemy will at once hurry out to cut them off, I shall conceal the infantry in the sandhills, ready to come out upon the rear of the pursuers. There would be practically little difficulty in carrying out these surprises if the troops under my command were not so raw, but my regular Cavalry has dwindled to almost nothing, and is replaced by raw but good recruits, while the irregulars are almost too eager on such occasions.

Of course next time some experience will have been gained. The enemy cannot keep a very sharp look out, as the Cavalry marched by Sherwood's to Wairoa, and back to Nukumarū unperceived, but after this they will be more alert.

I intend to lead them to think I am trying the same thing again, and conducting the movement in a slovenly manner, taking care that they shall just see the Cavalry apparently through negligence. As they are in great force from Pupatapu to Nukumaru, I feel no doubt that we shall succeed in drawing them into the open, and with the whole force I may be able to strike a satisfactory blow.

I am not sure whether anything will come of the Native Contingent—probably not. Pete has written to say he is coming with his people. I shall give Lieut.-Colonel McDonnell the option of accepting or declining the service of these Maoris. I think they are about the worst of these tribes as regards courage in the field.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

Enclosure in No. 7.

Copy of a Letter from Sub-Inspector NEWLAND to Colonel WHITMORE.

Head-Quarters,

Woodall's Redoubt, 27th November, 1868.

SIR,—

I have the honor to inform you that I marched this morning with all the Cavalry, being sixty-six of all ranks and corps, three hours before daylight to Wairoa, and remained five or six hours at that place, returning at 11 a.m. with despatches from Captain Hawes.

I reached Nukumaru graveyard at about 1 p.m., and in accordance with your orders, remained in concealment until an opportunity presented itself to act. After waiting about an hour and a half, perceiving a considerable number of Hauhaus about Mr. Handley's woolshed, I directed some of the men to advance dismounted, and followed with the rest of the force on horseback. Unfortunately a carbine went off accidentally which gave the alarm, and prevented our being as completely successful as we had hoped; but as soon as possible we mounted the dismounted men and charged, killing eight with sabre, revolver, or carbine, besides wounding others. I wish particularly to mention the extreme gallantry of Sergeant G. Maxwell, of the Kai Iwi Cavalry, who himself sabred two and shot one of the enemy, and was conspicuous throughout the affair. Many others of all corps behaved extremely well, but I think it would be invidious to particularize further. The enemy turned out immediately and kept up a sharp fire, following us about three miles. In accordance with my instructions I did not risk any further engagement, as the horses were tired, and the infantry were still at some distance.

The enemy is encamped in large force in rear of Nukumaru, near the bush, and has six bell tents erected.

I returned to camp at 6 p.m. I must acknowledge the assistance rendered to me by Captain O'Halloran, of the Patea Yeomanry Cavalry, and Lieut. Bryce, commanding Kai Iwi and Wanganui Cavalry. These gentlemen were prominent in this affair, and set their men a gallant example.

I have, &c.,

W. NEWLAND,

Sub-Inspector, A.C.

The Hon. Colonel Whitmore.

No. 8.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Wanganui, 2nd December, 1868.

I have the honor to report that I have embarked on board the p.s. "Sturt" and the s.s. "Ladybird" the following Colonial troops:—

No. 1 Division, Armed Constabulary	...	...	...	...	...	45
No. 3 Ditto ditto	...	...	...	...	...	50
No. 6 Ditto ditto	...	...	...	...	...	55
No. 7 Ditto ditto	...	...	...	...	...	55
Artillery Volunteers	...	...	...	...	...	7

212

I regret to say that the feeling of the population seems to me to be one of panic, and all express an unprotectedness not justified by the circumstances of the district; but as the papers have published numbers entirely different and very much beneath what we have left, which will tend to encourage the enemy, and to prevent the risk I have still more reduced the force I take with me, which is now below 250 men. At this moment there are some absentees, who during my short absence to write instructions broke through the sentries, and cannot be found. Probably I may yet pick these up, but at present they are not on board.

Lieut.-Colonel McDonnell is raising a Kupapa force in the spirit of my instructions, a copy of which is sent to you, and if he succeeds may be of great use. I hope he will not attempt to attack Titokowaru, if he does, I fear he will be defeated. I have expressly ordered him not to do so.

The force left under Lieut.-Colonel Herrick is as follows (I am unfortunately unable to get exact numbers), viz. :—

Armed Constabulary	...	...	...	...	...	230
Patea Yeomanry Cavalry	...	...	...	...	...	12
Militia called out	...	...	...	...	...	100
Cavalry Volunteers	...	...	...	...	...	50

392 without officers.

Besides this, some of the country Militia are on pay protecting the blockhouses and completing their garrisons which are still short.

I find besides these forces there are 700 Militia (first and second class), including those living immediately beyond the south bank of the Wanganui River.

I have every confidence that this force, equal to 1,200 of all ranks, and exclusive of military and Natives, will destroy the Hauhaus if they appear in this district; but the burning of individual houses I cannot pretend to prevent now, and Lieut.-Colonel Herrick still less can be expected to render it impossible. With a single match a single Native might destroy a whole village of deserted houses, unknown to and within a mile of the British army.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,
G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 9.

Copy of Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Off Wanganui, p.s. "Sturt,"

2nd December, 1868.

SIR,—

In compliance with my instructions to proceed to Poverty Bay with a portion of my force, and to make the best arrangements in my power for the maintenance of Patea, Wairoa, the Kai Iwi district, and the town of Wanganui, I decided to make the following arrangements, viz. :—

1. To throw in enough supplies of meat to Wairoa (to victual that station up to the 7th January).
2. To relieve a portion of Major Fraser's division with the detachment detained at Wanganui by stress of weather, which numbered 72 men.
3. To send a Cavalry party to Patea to acquaint Major Fraser of the proposed arrangements, and to direct him to march at once towards me.

With these main objects, on Sunday, 29th, directly I received my orders, I sent instructions to Lieut.-Colonel Gorton to order the Patea detachment, with the Wairoa drays, to proceed to the mouth of the Kai Iwi; and I directed Major Noake to call out the Militia of the 1st and 2nd classes to the number of 100, to proceed to the vicinity of Stewart's Redoubt, to cover the erection of No. 3 blockhouse on Mount Bryce. I also directed Major Noake to call out Captain Finimore's troop of Wanganui Cavalry, and to direct it to proceed to the mouth of the Kai Iwi before nightfall.

During the course of the day the enemy threw up some rifle-pits and some slight palisading opposite my camp, and fired and yelled a good deal; but, beyond discharging the rifles that had been long loaded, and giving the Artillery a few rounds of practice (which I must say they appear to need very much), I took no notice of this impudent demonstration. I felt convinced that the enemy designed to cover some marauding movement on my right flank, or to entrap me to send a cavalry party across by some ambuscaded track. In the former idea, and under the advice of Lieutenant Bryce, a most intelligent officer (who always seems to be right in his reading of Maori designs), I despatched the Kai Iwi Cavalry to a fortified house near Stewart's Redoubt to waylay the paths, and at daylight I learned from him that he had actually prevented the burning of Dr. Mussen's house by sending a waylaying party to it at 1 p.m., just too late to catch a small marauding party which abstracted some articles between 7 p.m. and 1 a.m. This reconciled me to relinquish the hope of the assistance of the Kai Iwi Cavalry,—valuable to me, because so many of its members, besides being reliable men are so intimately acquainted with the country. Later in the day the house of the late Mr. Hewitt was burned, probably in their retreat by the marauders, justifying the inference of Lieutenant Bryce, which I had hardly felt satisfied was correct on receipt of his first report.

I knew, however, that the true mode of drawing in the enemy's foragers was to advance myself, and I therefore pushed on with all my effectives except fifty men at 5 a.m., meeting at 7 a.m. the drays and their escort, with Captain Finimore's troop, at the junction of the seaside and inland tracks. The enemy's camp was now in sight, and his mounted men hovered about in front of my advanced guard. I attempted to cut these off by a rapid movement of the Wanganui Cavalry and Mounted Constabulary to my right to get between them and the bush at Pakaraka. Nothing could have been more spirited than the efforts of the Wanganui Cavalry. Splendidly mounted, gaily dressed in the regulation uniform of the Colony, their flank movement had all the appearance of a charge of regular cavalry, to which title, indeed, the excellent drill and discipline of the corps fully entitles it. My positive orders were to run no risk of being entrapped into unsuitable ground for cavalry; and as the enemy narrowly escaped them, and a hot fire was opened upon them, Captain Finimore drew off his troop, which could not act any further. The enemy had evidently prepared a trap into which the cavalry were almost led, having taken up a position behind a bank, and rifle-pitted the edge of the bush. Four horses of the Cavalry and Armed Constabulary were wounded by their fire, though no casualty happily occurred among the men. I now pushed forward my infantry skirmishers, and having reached my old lines, halted the drays and column to cook breakfast, under the cover of an extended picquet. I now also sent Captain Newland to Patea, by the sandhills, a duty he carried out rapidly, though the tempest of sand blowing in his face, and the necessity of swimming the rivers, made it a painful and perhaps dangerous one.

In relieving my skirmishers, when the old picquet had almost reached the column, one man of No. 7 was mortally (I fear) wounded by a shot, at least at 1,400 yards range. This was my only casualty throughout these operations.

The enemy had meanwhile left Pakaraka, and assembled his force at Tauranga Ika, perhaps one mile in a direct line from Nukumarū Lake, in a horseshoe-shaped recess of the bush, where he had a large camp of tents and whares standing. The points of the horseshoe he had joined by a fence or palisade. His front seemed largely rifle-pitted, and he had evidently further defences within the bush. Such a position I did not choose to attack when pressed for time, and with many other objects of more importance to attend to (with an inferior force). My chief object was to get my drays through the defile at Nukumarū, and safely past the sandhills, on the way to Waitotara; and if incidentally I could draw the enemy into the open, on a field where he had once before met with a partial success against great odds, I thought the time would be well spent in manœuvring with that object, and the hope that he would come out against an inferior force not altogether groundless.

I therefore sent on the Patea force and Wairoa drays, moving up my infantry in two lines of skirmishers towards the enemy's camp. This movement prevented his interfering with my drays, and to give it more semblance of intention to assault, I moved the Cavalry in extended order, as if ready to make a dash at his skirmishers. These latter we pushed back, and the enemy showed a large force, exclusive of his advanced party, not less than 400 to 450 men. But he would not move out towards me. To conceal my real design I now took ground in single file to my left, and so slowly marched in fighting order across the front of his position. The drays having passed Mr. Handley's, I now filed past the Lake, moving the Cavalry by the sandhills, and halting across the drayroad entrance to the plains from Waitotara. The enemy, however, did not move. He put up signals of recall to all his outlying parties, and showed his force, but stood obstinately on the defensive. The rain coming on now induced me to leave this position, and I marched without further incident to Waitotara.

Here I passed the Patea party, some sheep, and the drays across, and sent them to Wairoa, receiving intelligence in the night that that post was in good heart, and that the drays had safely arrived.

The enemy did not molest us during the night, and at 5 a.m. I sent on Nos. 2, 6, and 7 to Okahu, with instructions to halt there for orders. No. 3 Armed Constabulary I halted at Waitotara, to support No. 1, which reached me at 7 a.m. I now sent Captain Finnimore to manœuvre towards Nukumarū to endeavour to draw out the enemy under the impression, as he must have seen our movements from Weraroa, that the cavalry were unsupported. I should not fail to observe that Captain Finnimore's troop had most obligingly brought No. 1 across the Waitotara, which was rather high for footmen.

The Divisions Nos. 1 and 3 now moved off, and though delayed by the tide, accomplished the rest of their march to Westmere without seeing the enemy, who could not be drawn out by Captain Finnimore's troop, though he held it out like a red rag to irritate a bull, and we well know they burn to avenge the surprise carried out by Captain Newland and Lieutenant Bryce.

All the Divisions encamped at Westmere, No. 1 having marched in heavy marching order over sandhills and sandbeach from Patea between 2 a.m. and 7 p.m., a movement not easily surpassed, and speaking volumes for the eagerness of this Division to avenge the sufferers at Poverty Bay.

I cannot close this despatch without observing that the Armed Constabulary carried out this march entirely in heavy marching order; that they were incessantly manœuvring in fern, and undergoing a deluge of dust which made them suffer cruelly. Nevertheless their movements were regular, and their bearing cheerful. They wasted no fire, and learned more of their duties than by a great deal of drill. All hoped to have been able to fight in the open field, and were disappointed that the enemy would not come out. I think, in future, it will be possible to persuade the men not to carry such large loads on their backs, but they have not suffered more than some inconvenience from persisting in this unsoldierlike practice. I have to thank all the officers for the efforts to carry out my orders, and especially, to thank Captain Finnimore, an officer of great smartness and high promise, for his zealous exertions, and to record my warm admiration of the gallantry, efficiency, and discipline, inferior to that of no troops under my command, which have distinguished his Troop during these operations. I may here add, that though it has been my painful duty to receive frequent reports of the unwillingness to serve of the Militia of this district, yet none of them, when they appeared in the field, have failed to distinguish themselves against the enemy.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 10.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Camp, Poverty Bay, 11th December, 1868.

I have the honor to inform you that the force under the command of Henare Tomoana, Renata, Hapuku, Tareha, and myself, marched in pursuit of the enemy on the 21st November. On reaching Patutahi the head of the column had a skirmish with a few stragglers belonging to Kooti's men. We killed two. On the evening of the 24th November we overtook the enemy and engaged at once, seized a small hill commanding their camp, driving back the enemy's left. During the night we entrenched ourselves, and waited for a supply of ammunition. The enemy strengthened their position so much that we thought it advisable to wait for reinforcements, especially as Kooti seemed inclined to fight. Our loss in this affair was five killed and eight wounded. That of the enemy twelve killed, wounded not known, but Te Waru and Kooti said to be hit.

On the 3rd December Ngatiporou reached us, and the whole line advanced and stormed the enemy's position. Our loss this time was three men wounded. We killed twenty-seven of the enemy, amongst whom was Noma. We also killed nine during the few days following, making their total loss up to the 3rd fifty killed.

Next day we went in pursuit of the enemy, but owing to a disagreement between Tareha and Ropata the friendly Natives returned without encountering the enemy. We saw that he was building a pa in a very strong position. Next day the Napier Natives went back to Turanga; but Mr. Preece and I persuaded Ngatiporou to proceed to attack the enemy's new position. This we did, but after fighting for twenty-four hours and killing ten of the enemy, amongst whom was Kareta, also taking possession of one end of the pa, Ropata retired,—he had expected to take the place in an hour or two, and his men had left their blankets and provisions. We ran out of ammunition, and the weather had changed to wet. As soon as we had left, the enemy burned their pa and retreated. Their total loss was about sixty-five killed, besides wounded.

Ammunition was on the road, and within three miles of the front when we retired. The chief Ropata showed great courage and determination, and deserves the highest praise.

Mr. Preece deserves the thanks of the public for his exertions to make the friendlies fight,—also for his marked gallantry.

I have, &c.,

F. W. GASCOIGNE,
Sub-Inspector, A.C.

Forwarded to the Defence Minister, and recommended to his attention the favourable notice of the chief Ropata and Mr. Preece. To the Natives belongs all the credit of these successes.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 11.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Camp Patutahi, 18th December, 1868.

On the 12th instant I received intelligence towards evening that Te Kooti was to be at this place on the following day. This intelligence was given to the Hon. Mr. Richmond and myself by certain prisoners who had surrendered themselves, and who seemed earnest in their assurances that it was the case. The friendly chiefs Hotene and Ropata, who had throughout insisted that Kooti's band was dispersed, seemed shaken in their opinion, and the chief Henare Potae did not conceal his anxiety and complete belief of the report. Up to this time the opinion of the Natives, both Ngatikahungunu and Ngatiporou, agreed with that of Sub-Inspector Gascoigne, that after the last engagement the enemy had abandoned the hill on which he had fortified himself, and that any advance in that direction was useless. Acting on these opinions, which were so strongly expressed, Mr. Richmond decided to take measures for the protection of the Bay, and to send back the troops and Natives. I had consequently embarked 100 men on board the "Sturt" when this intelligence reached me; and had it not happened that she sprung a leak, Inspector Roberts and his men would have been far on their way by the next morning.

After consulting with Mr. Richmond, I moved the Cavalry (16) towards Patutahi in the afternoon, and sent on No. 1 Division to Makaraka, with orders to move forward at daylight. The rest of the force I ordered to follow from Turanganui at dawn.

During the night a report reached me that the Cavalry had fallen back to Makaraka on No. 1 Division, having heard some voices at Patutahi, and being thereupon deserted by their scouts.

I now moved on myself with No. 1 and the Cavalry, but could find no trace of the enemy, neither footmarks nor fires, nor, on cross-examination, could any man be found to admit that he had heard any voices in the night. The Maori constables of No. 1 pushed on and searched the country diligently, but no enemy or trace of an enemy could be discovered.

Finding this I despatched a messenger to Mr. Richmond to inform him that the report of the prisoners was untrue, and that I should therefore re-embark the troops. My orderlies on their way down had given Inspector Roberts orders to return and embark, so that with the deduction of the force left at Makaraka I had only 130 men with me, and with these I halted and cooked. The Ngatiporou also halted on the road, and were returning as no enemy appeared. My orderlies, after a while, returned with the intelligence that some persons who had imprudently ventured into the bush at the mouth of the Arai were missing,—that the enemy was at that place in great force, and that Ihaka Wanga was engaged with him. I sent at once to Inspector Roberts orders to hurry up to Ihaka's support, and I sent the same directions to Ngatiporou. With the force actually with me I tried to take a position between the enemy and his retreat. I now reconnoitered on my right flank, and seeing about 100 of the enemy trying to escape, I counter-marched the troops, and tried hard to bar his passage to the gorge leading to his fastnesses. The men had about three, the enemy full four miles to march, and the men did their very best to push on. Yet by the time the two paths met the Hauhaus had gained the gorge, and there seemed to be no prospect of overtaking them. It happened, however, that I had sent Sub-Inspectors Newland and Gascoigne up the gorge a few miles, and as they found no tracks they halted to rest, and thus were in the gorge when the enemy entered it, and were marching towards me. Captain Newland therefore met the enemy and fired on him, which hampered his retreat. By this accident we came up with them, and the men dashed on with much spirit, almost overtaking them. At first they fired on us, but speedily made off, carrying one man, and as they ascended the next range two others were seen a long way behind, being supported by their comrades. I could not pursue very far, being uncertain whether the whole of Kooti's force had left the bush at the Arai. However, our pursuit had been so sharp that the enemy left all his baggage and plunder of every description, and two of his three horses. In a wet swamp adjoining his line of march it is believed another of his men is lying, and I shall make further search there, though it is difficult to get into it without sinking.

In the skirmish I lost, I regret to say, one sergeant of No. 1 Division, whose death, rightly or wrongly, is attributed by the men to the awkwardness of the recruits, who certainly did wound another man in the head.

On the 15th the Ngatiporous, as agreed, left for their homes; and Ihaka Whanga, at Mr. Richmond's request, went to Wairoa. His reason for this last step was that Te Waru and Nikora have left Te Kooti, and might perhaps attack that settlement.

Ropata assured me before leaving that he would soon return with a better set of men; and he procured me accurate information regarding Kooti's stronghold, which leads me to hope I may manage to secure him there. It is evident he will not face our men in the open, and it is feared that he may fire a volley or two from his stronghold and then retreat, in which case our men cannot overtake him. For this reason Mr. Richmond has delayed operations until the arrival of the Ngatiporou, some of whom landed to-day. I think now I can move on my stores and supplies to avoid escorts, for which I have neither horses nor men.

If Te Kooti stands, unless his position and force are very different to that described, there seems to be a reasonable probability of our taking his pa and preventing his escape. It is however rumoured that he means to try various flank movements of foraging parties, and if he does this my want of Cavalry

will make my operations more difficult. Still, with my present and expected force, I do not see anything likely to be apprehended, except the enemy escape, that would delay me much here, or otherwise be unfavourable; and we run an equal chance of taking his stronghold, and defeating him with great loss, without very much sacrifice of life. The success or failure of the expedition will turn upon the practicability of investing him, and of this, not knowing the ground, I can form no positive opinion. Nevertheless, I am anxious to try, and at least confident that in doing so I do not risk any serious reverse. Of course I mean when the Ngatiporou, or even a part of them, join me. Before that, it is at a least a matter of doubt whether my force can keep up its communications and invest the place.

The officers and men are behaving very well; but I am disappointed in Mr. Gascoigne's scouts, who are never to be found, and are by no means enterprising.

To-morrow morning Major Fraser will reconnoitre to my right flank towards Waikohu, a stream running into the Waipao some little way above Waerengahika, and descending the hills by a valley to the left front, looking with one's back to the sea.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 12.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Ngatapa, 30th December, 1868.

In continuation of previous despatches, I have the honor to inform you that having satisfied myself by reconnoitring expeditions on both flanks that the enemy was not attempting any movement in force on either flank, I moved forward on the 24th instant from Fort Fraser at Patutahi, and pressed on my material and stores from that post and Fort St. John as far as I had been able to make wheel traffic good, to my front,—a distance of perhaps eight miles. Here my advanced parties captured two of the enemy's spies—one an old man—whose insolent bearing so provoked the Arawa that they shot them. What little the elder one (whom I had hoped to save) said was to the effect that Te Kooti was in my front a few miles with his men, having received large reinforcements from the Uriweras. He said "Go back, go back, the land is full of Hauhaus: did you not see the 'star'?" I have since had reason to believe that all he said was untrue. However, I built a small redoubt to protect a tent of stores, with a garrison of a dozen men, and on Christmas Day moved on, making the road good for pack-transport, and took post beyond the high range which terminates the valley.

Here again I erected a small defensible post which I christened Fort Roberts, and collected all the burdens I could in two trips get from the pack-animals. From the highest ranges I could obtain no signs of the enemy, but I found the trail of his scouts leading away from me. I this day learned the arrival of the Ngatiporou.

On the 26th I marched, leaving the detachment previously sent on by the Ngatiporou to guard my artillery and stores, and to await the arrival of the rest of their tribe under Ropata. I reached this evening the late camp of the Ngatikahungunu, and slept. The enemy's position was now in full view, but he made no movement to oppose my march. Nevertheless I took precautions to prevent his surprising me on the march or laying ambuscades, in which the young Arawa Division proved extremely valuable.

On the 27th, having drawn the rations brought up by the pack-horses the preceding night, I pushed forward to within a mile of Ngatapa, and occupied the ridge opposite the enemy's fortifications. Here I bivouacked and strengthened my position, sending back parties to improve the track, which was trying to the pack-animals. I now learned that the Ngatiporou were marching, but delayed by the illness of their fighting chief Ropata. Although the difficulty of supply was increased by every day's delay, and my arrangements did not contemplate any very protracted operations, I placed myself in the hands of the Hon. Mr. Richmond, who had kindly consented to remain to assist me, and trusting to him the real difficulty of the campaign, I resolved to await the Ngatiporou, and to make a simultaneous movement when I marched to cut off the enemy's retreat at the same time as I closed him in in front.

The position of Ngatapa is by a great deal the most difficult and strongest I have ever seen in this country; and of those in my camp, none, European or Native, has ever met with a stronger. Rising abruptly out of a confused and "tormented" mass of forest-clad hills, a single cone-shaped mountain rises, conspicuous from its height and isolation. It is covered with bush, which has been to some extent cut down and burned. The apex of the hill, which is perhaps 2,000 feet high, is girt by a triple line of fortification, and of these the two inner ones rise to a height of 12 feet. Rifle-pits guard the front and the water, which is distant some few chains; and a scarped ridge, said to be impracticable for the descent of the garrison, terminates two, if not all three, of the parapets. These latter are built as we build fortifications, with fern and sticks. I learn that behind the ridge the apex is descended by a ladder to a second knoll on which the kainga of the women stands, and by this alone, I am informed, can the garrison escape to the rear. My plan has therefore been to send a strong party to the rear to intercept escape, while with the bulk of the force I approach the main body of the place by flying sap where necessary, or even by single sap, so as to render all attempt to burst out impossible. I have brought up the cohorts, with the view of employing vertical fire, which, I believe, has never yet been used in Maori warfare, and with which they are probably unacquainted. I now pressed forward small reconnoitring parties; but to all appearance the enemy's garrison consists of only 150 men, who are all employed in adding to the defences.

The 28th passed without any tidings from the rear, the pack-horses bringing up a report that the Ngatiporou would not march. I assembled the senior officers, and having ascertained their views decided that as the supply was difficult and expensive, and as we could not abandon the enterprise because we could no longer calculate on a complete success, we should send to the rear to ascertain for certain whether the Ngatiporou were coming, and if they were not, to attack the place in front only. The natural consequence of doing so would be at best but an imperfect success; but the spirits of the

men were flagging, and a movement was absolutely necessary. I employed most of the men in practising the single and flying sap.

Early on the 29th, I heard that the Ngatiporou were really advancing, and were actually at Fort Roberts. I therefore completed a small redoubt for my stores, and rode down to meet the Ngatiporou, whom I met at the Whare Kopai Stream. My reception was most cordial. The tribe flocked round me, and appeared in the highest spirits. Ropata, however, was so ill as to be compelled to halt. He said he had feared I was impatient, and that Mr. Richmond had given him permission to return; but he knew if he did so the tribe would be of little use, so that he had decided to come on as fast as he was able, however slow. He promised to come up next day.

Meanwhile, under great difficulties, the pack-transport was being pressed forward by Mr. Richmond and Captain Newland and Mr. Smith, whom I had engaged for the service. The deficiency of sumpter animals was a considerable obstacle, but, working with a will, it was going on favourably. The meat supply was also difficult, as animals could with difficulty be kept at night. To avoid this, I constructed sheep-yards, and had small flocks of sheep driven up for slaughter. Mutton is inferior to beef for the field, but it possesses a great advantage in being a more manageable sort of stock.

On the 30th, at 8 a.m., Ropata arrived, and soon after the Ngatiporou, who were very well received by the Arawas, of whom they speak in terms of admiration. I sent out this day a party to scout, and another road-party to facilitate the transport, and sent the pack-train to Fort Fraser to obtain further supplies and more ammunition. I had proposed to advance this afternoon, but to my very great embarrassment and regret am obliged, at 4 p.m. (when I accidentally discover it), to send express despatches to Turanganui for ammunition to complete the Ngatiporou, who have only twenty rounds per man, my supply in reserve not being nearly sufficient to complete them, and leaving me without anything to fall back upon. Under these circumstances, I am most unwillingly obliged to put off my advance one day at least, and to send to Mr. Richmond to beg him to add largely to the order sent down yesterday.

I shall however trust to receiving further ammunition to-morrow, and at dawn move forward, though I sadly fear Te Kooti will retreat in the night. This fear is not shared by the Maori chiefs; but this deficiency, which is incomprehensible, when it is considered how many opportunities the Natives have had of being completed, discourages me, and renders me perhaps less hopeful than I should otherwise have been.

I have this despatch forwarded by express to be read by Mr. Richmond, who cannot fail to take the most immediate steps to repair the only cause of delay which can be attributed to anything except the vicious tribalized Native system, under which, among many other causes of delay and misfit, all the ammunition issued on one expedition is made away with before the next, for I have no doubt that most of these Natives were complete before they returned to their homes.

If Te Kooti does remain till morning, there is a very fair prospect of entirely cutting him off, and I trust some certainty that his stronghold will be taken, though the time occupied may be some days, possibly ten or twelve. The account of the scouting party is not as favourable as I could wish with regard to the road of the party sent round to intercept the enemy's rear; but distant views of country do not convey accurate ideas of localities always, and the guides seem certain they are right, so I shall make no change of plan.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 13.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Ngatapa, 5th January, 1869.

My last despatch, of the 30th ultimo, brought my operations up to the establishment of the depôt for my siege operations on the next ridge to this place. I there built a redoubt, and named it Fort Richmond. I could get pack-animals to this point, after improving the track, easily enough, though the hills were high; but there was no grass, and horses had to go back to Fort Roberts directly they delivered their loads. Beyond this point the track was across too rugged a region to admit of pack-transport till I had devoted labour to improve it, and I was compelled to trust to the men carrying their rations and ammunition up and down the two hills on their backs.

On the 31st, I marched* at daylight to the conical rise on the same ridge as Ngatapa Pa, but about 700 yards from it. The apex of this rise I fortified and christened the Crow's Nest. Here I posted a few of the best shots of the force as a picket to prevent the Natives from firing away ammunition if the enemy should open fire upon my position.

The Hauhaus were plainly visible, strengthening their fortifications, when we arrived; and I turned the morning to good account myself, strengthening my camp and improving the road to my rear with Nos. 6 and 7 A.C.

At length, about 1 p.m., the enemy opened fire, discharging a volley suddenly, but all his bullets fell short. Our sharpshooters replied by a dropping but well-directed fire, which continued till night, the enemy replying by volleys now and again.

In the evening, after receiving the reports of the scouts and consulting with the chief Ropata, I decided that it would be better to change the route by which I had intended to send the party to the rear of the place. The right-flank gully was evidently the better adapted for such a march, and I ascertained that it was also the shortest. Our scouts moreover informed us, that from the apparent fortifications round to the rear entrance there were no fortifications at all, and that on the enemy's left the cliff was so steep as to render attack or escape alike impossible. The cliff on his right flank was

* Force marched 31st:—No. 1 Armed Constabulary—3 officers, 64 men; No. 3 A.C.—2 officers, 61 men; No. 6 A.C.—2 officers, 55 men; No. 7 A.C.—3 officers, 62 men; No. 8 A.C. (Arawas)—1 officer, 60 men. Total, A.C.—11 officers, 302 men. Ngatiporou—370 men. Head-quarters, spies, scouts, Medical Department, &c.—5 officers, 6 men. Total—16 officers, 678 men.

not so steep or high. Not having enough men to undertake both cliffs, I decided to neglect that on the enemy's left, about 250 yards of which I left without a guard throughout the siege.

After carefully considering the subject with Ropata and Hotene, I gave orders to Major Fraser to march at dawn with 200 men (100 of Hotene's Maoris, and 100 Armed Constabulary), descending by the bush into the bed of the creek, and keeping in concealment, to work his way to the point A. on the plan; on reaching this he was to send back for orders.

Ropata, with 60 No. 8 Division, A.C., and 60 Ngatiporous, was to take a parallel but shorter route, and to gain the crest of the ridge about G, where he too was to halt for orders.

Major Fraser, after some few hours, sent back for ammunition and reinforcements, having carried out his instructions and shot four of the enemy. I sent his requirements on at once, and ordered him to get as close as possible to the pa.

Ropata, without being discovered, gained his position and entrenched himself, sending back to ask for orders. I now moved on the Armed Constabulary and more Ngatiporous, sending orders to Ropata to extend to his left, and close in to the work.

By night the investment, as far as it can be so called, was complete—Major Fraser, from my extreme left, had communicated with me along my line; Inspector Roberts, with No. 6 Division, was posted on Hotene's right, under the cliff in the position shown in the plan, with a few Natives to assist him in keeping watch; Wickliffe and Albert prolonged the line to Ropata, who in turn touched the Artillery, which now came up with the mortar; and the Division No. 7 A.C., with the Turanga Volunteers, under my personal directions, guarded and formed the trenches of the main attack, while No. 8 A.C. (Arawas) were posted on the right. This line was exactly 750 yards long. From No. 8 to Major Fraser the cliff was to some extent flanked by the fire of both, but not guarded, for the reasons above explained.

It now came on to rain, an unfortunate circumstance, because while on the one hand the enemy obtained water, on the other the formation of the approaches progressed very slowly, the Natives not working with the zeal they had hitherto displayed, and my force of Europeans with the main attack being exceedingly small. Moreover, the rain added enormously to the difficulties of the pack-transport, already heavily taxed, and utterly without any reserve of animals (for the resources of the district did not afford them) to fall back upon. As I perceived that in consequence of the weather some delay must occur in reducing the place, I called upon Captain Towgood, who had volunteered his services to Mr. McLean, to ride back, and to endeavour by every means in his power to push on the supplies and ammunition.

This gentleman kindly undertook to do so, and, I may here observe, throughout the siege was earnest and energetic in his efforts to forward my wishes, and to carry out Mr. Richmond's directions. All the 2nd the enemy was watching for an outlet, and whenever a few shells were thrown into the place, made a rush somewhere along the line to try to get out. Major Fraser repulsed several sorties, in one of which the men came to a hand-to-hand struggle, and three of our men were hurled over the precipice, while four of the enemy were killed. The mud in the trenches, and the continual rain without shelter, made the European troops suffer greatly from fatigue, but they managed to keep up their spirits, and turned out after their brief intervals of sleep willingly. During the morning Major St. John, trusting to the mist, endeavoured to approach the enemy's works almost by himself. He might perhaps have gone actually to the outer wall, had I not ordered him back when I learned the melancholy fate of Captain Brown, commanding No. 7 Division, who had been shot dead in the trenches at that moment. Being short of officers, a great deal of duty devolved upon Major St. John besides staff duties, and it was very fortunate that Mr. Capel, the only other officer with the attack, turned out, though so young, so good an officer.

The enemy employed sharpshooters all day to watch our trenches, but our cover left him little opening; nevertheless a few wounded or killed necessarily fell to our lot.

On the 3rd I made a careful inspection of the whole line, and satisfied myself that there was no point especially weak. I also recalled Mr. Gascoigne from Major Fraser and his Natives to do duty with his division (No. 7), Mr. Capel having meanwhile been wounded.

The Natives repulsed several sorties during the day, and Major Fraser was attacked very determinedly, and lost a few men. Ropata was indefatigable in inspecting his line and keeping the men to their duty.

The great difficulty was the chasm between Fort Richmond and Ngatapa: across this all our provisions were "humped" by the men (30) left behind by me in the last camp. The greasy state of the bush track and the steepness of the road made it a painful duty, still Mr. Stopford and his men carried it out without one murmur. These men often came into camp very late at night carrying as much as 500 rounds on their backs, after having twice before struggled across those slippery hills the same day, with supplies, ammunition, or shell.

On this day also the enemy made several sorties, and a few escaped naked. The shelling of the place occasionally at the hours for the reliefs during the night kept the enemy uneasy and without sleep, while it assisted in awakening the tired portion of our men whose duty it was to rise. Several attempts were made during the early morning to escape by small parties, which only resulted in the death of those who tried to break through our lines. During the night Captain Skeet stole up to the outer wall, and found it apparently untenanted. It was a gallant effort, but I heard of it too late to take advantage of it.

The shell practice was very good all day, notwithstanding the difficulties of weighing the charges in the rain without a tent, and was equally so at night. We thought it likely the enemy would have tried to break through during this night, and very little sleep fell to the lot of any, but he made no general sortie.

On the 1st I had offered in loud language, which they heard and answered, to allow any faithful persons, or women and children, to pass my lines in safety. This summons was three times repeated, and each time, though our fire slackened and ceased, we were fired upon by the enemy before we reopened. I considered, therefore, that every fair opportunity had been given, and that the

enemy had accepted the evident alternative. The weather was beginning to clear, and the Native allies began to come out from their little sheltering erections like butterflies, and all the force began to take heart.

All this time, thanks to the exertions of Mr. Richmond and those in rear, among whom I may especially mention Mr. Stopford, Quartermaster Anderson, Captain Newland, Mr. George Smith, Captain Towgood, and Mr. Bower, the supply was well kept up.

Sheep were driven up to the front, and our meat supply was never a cause of disquietude. We made yards at every post, and without trouble easily kept our sheep ready for killing.

The narrative of this siege has been kept better by Major St. John than I have described it, and I shall send his notes to you. The mortar, doubtless, did us some service; but it also produced a moral effect, showing that no fastnesses can withstand the energy, perseverance, and determination of our troops when aroused by such horrible atrocities as had been committed by the band of murderers under Te Kooti.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,
G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 14.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Turanganui, 8th January, 1869.

I have the satisfaction of informing the Government that on the 5th instant the bush and mountain fortress of Ngatapa—the chosen stronghold of Te Kooti and his band of murderers—fell into the hands of the Colonial Forces. Previous reports bring the account of the siege to the 4th instant. On that day the sorties of the enemy along our whole line became frequent, and Major Fraser, who had charge of the rear, sent to inform me that he feared he could not much longer prevent the escape of the enemy, unless I caused an immediate attack. I requested Ropata to send out scouts to make a more minute examination of the position, and learned from them that the outer ditch and wall might be taken by a concealed movement. I despatched a party of Armed Constabulary (No. 8, Arawa) and thirty Ngatiporou to carry out this project, resolving, when in possession of the outer work, to blow up the inner lines. The party advanced under cover of the bush, the attention of the enemy being engaged by a heavy fire from all the trenches, and with a bound and a cheer they scaled the edge of the cliff and took possession of the left extremity of the work, the enemy immediately retreating. Meantime the right was seized by Wikiriwhi and Arapeta with their men. This operation was finished by dark, and by dawn our men were but a few feet from the completion of my purpose, when we learned that the enemy were escaping. The fortification was immediately entered by our men, when it appeared that Te Kooti had made off, lowering his men and some of the women down the steepest and therefore least guarded part of the cliff. The escape had scarcely been finished when we entered the fortification, and the enemy were so weakened by insufficient food and prolonged watching that I was confident of overtaking the fugitives. A large part of the Native force was at once in eager pursuit. By sundown the number of killed, either in the pa or in the pursuit, had reached 120. By night the following day most of the pursuers had returned, bringing two of Te Kooti's wives, and 136 of the band were killed.

Although the women fought, and excited the men by their cries, I am happy to say that, in obedience to my orders, they and the children were spared. Had it been otherwise, the ordinary custom of Maori warfare and the singular atrocities committed by Te Kooti's band might have palliated the want of mercy; and the obedience of the Ngatiporou and Arawa is proportionately creditable.

I blew up the main fortification in the manner I had already planned, and the result was an excellent breach. I then fired a salute of twenty-one guns from the cohorn, and on the evening of the 7th and morning of the 8th evacuated the hill altogether.

The total number of the enemy certainly ascertained to be killed, up to the time of the return of the last pursuers, is 136; but I am generally informed that more were killed than have been recorded, and many of the wounded must have died in the mountainous forest which extends for many miles in every direction in rear of the fortress. Among the dead are many men of note—Nikora of Ngatihineuri, the leader of the murdering party, and Rangiaho, one of the highest of the Uriwera chiefs, are the best known. The pursuers were few if any of them acquainted with Te Kooti, and it is possible he may be among the killed; at all events, defeated, twice wounded, a fugitive, and failing in his prophecies, he is not likely again to trouble the district, or assemble a fresh band of assassins, even should he survive the hardships before him, or escape the vengeance of the Uriwera upon an impostor. Thus the murders of our unfortunate countrywomen and their helpless children have been avenged on the spot chosen as the strongest in a very rugged forest country by the wretches who perpetrated these crimes.

The harmonious working of the Colonial Force, composed of about equal numbers of Europeans and Maoris, has thus conquered unprecedented difficulties, and I find it almost impossible to select for praise out of a force, all of whom displayed extraordinary zeal. Major St. John (who acted as Brigade-Major), Major Fraser, Inspector Roberts, Major Westrup (who, with the Turanga Volunteers, did most disagreeable and laborious duty with a readiness which I feel bound to refer to specially, as I have on a former occasion made a complaint of the same corps), and the late Captain Brown, all performed their parts to my entire satisfaction. Captain Newland and Mr. George Smith carried on the transport service by day and night with untiring energy. Mr. Stopford, who, with his detachment, carried provisions across the deep ravine and up the steep ascent of Ngatapa, must also be named. I trust that the Government may think right to recognize the services of Majors St. John and Fraser.

To no officer was I more indebted than to the chief Ropata Wahatoaha. His courage in the fight was equalled by the wisdom of his counsel and the command he possessed over his men; whilst

his knowledge of the position, derived from a previous chivalrous attempt to take the place with a handful of his tribe and three or four Europeans, was of the greatest value. He was well supported by Hotene, Wikiriwhi, and other chiefs.

Captain Gundry and the Arawa (No. 8 A. C.) were the admiration of the whole force. Always in front, always cheerful and obedient, as brave as they were well behaved. Much of the credit of this belongs to their officer.

I wish to bring to your notice, for any reward or decoration that may be deemed proper, Constables Black and Biddle, who defended the advanced rifle-pits at close quarters with resolute bravery.

The Medical Staff, under Dr. Ormond; the Quartermaster's Department, under Mr. Anderson; the Artillery, under Sergeant-Major Anderson; and the Commissariat in port, under Captain Bower,—are equally entitled to praise.

I have also to thank Mr. Richmond, who was present during the whole of the operations, either in port, on the road, or at the front, and who, seconded by the energy of Captain Towgood, secured the effective working of my hastily-organized commissariat and transport service.

Lastly, I have to thank my volunteer A.D.C. Mr. Forster, and Captain Skeet, who volunteered his services as engineer, and displayed great courage.

Among the list of the casualties, happily a short one, two have caused great grief to all who knew them—Captain Brown, of No. 7 Division, A.C., and Sergeant Hetaraka, No. 1 Division. Captain Brown was modest, gallant, conscientious, and his men grieved sincerely over his death. In the work he carried out, and in the discipline and affection of his men, he has shown how good and faithful a servant the Colony has lost.

Hetaraka, one of the bravest and highest-born of the Arawa, known to the whole force by his intelligence and smartness, fell in the very front of Major Fraser's division, while in conversation with Major Fraser, and engaged reconnoitring the enemy.

Very full plans and sections have been executed by Mr. Bousfield, and accompany this despatch.

I trust I shall not be thought to lay too much stress on the capture of Ngatapa, which, besides the interest attaching to the overcoming of the physical difficulties of forest and mountain at a distance from supplies, has the great advantage of reassuring our men as to their own capacity to deal with a desperate and remorseless enemy, and to perform any service which the Colony can require at their hands.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

CASUALTY RETURN of the KILLED and WOUNDED at the SIEGE of NGATAPA, 1st to 5th January, 1869.

Officer Killed.

Sub-Inspector Captain Brown, No. 7 Division, A.C.

Officer Wounded.

Acting Sub-Inspector Capel, No 7 Division, A.C.

Non-commissioned Officers and Men Killed.

No. 1 Division, A.C.—Sergeant Hetaraka, Constable McEwen,

Constable Sawyer, Constable Chislett.

No. 3 Division, A.C.—Constable Clarendon.

Ngatiporou.—Hori Pourewa, Ropata Paingaware, Hunia

Huapapa, Heremaiah Taurai, Himiona Matahu.

Non-commissioned Officers and Men Wounded.

No. 1 Division, A.C.—Constable Crosbie.

No. 3 Division, A.C.—Constable Smith, Constable Clancey.

No. 8 Division, A.C. (Arawas.)—Constable Ihaia Matunau.

Ngatiporou.—Horepa Pokino, Herewini Te Mano, Riwai

Pakerua.

Total—1 officer and 10 non-commissioned officers and men killed. 1 officer and 7 non-commissioned officers and men wounded.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 15.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Kai Iwi, 22nd January, 1869.

I have the honor herewith to forward the enclosed Reports from Lieut.-Colonels Lyon and McDonnell of certain operations carried out by them.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

Enclosure 1 in No. 15.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel LYON to Colonel WHITMORE.

SIR,—

Camp Westmere, 18th January, 1869.

I have the honor to report for your information that I sent a force, on Tuesday, the 12th instant, at 5.30 p.m., to encamp for the night at Kai Iwi. I joined the force next morning at 7 a.m., accompanied by Lieut.-Colonel Herrick, with eight troopers as an escort, and marched to Nukumarū, arriving there about noon.

My object for so doing was to test the efficiency of the gunners, there being no place in the immediate vicinity of this camp for gunnery practice, and I considered the rebel pa suitable for the purpose.

The gun was placed in position at 1 p.m. behind a bank and ditch, a small portion being levelled in front, and 100 men placed in it in skirmishing order.

I opened fire at what I considered 800 yards, but the shell falling short the gun was sighted for 1,000 yards, at which range very good practice was made, every shell bursting inside the palisading. After firing twelve rounds, I ordered Major Cumming to return to camp with the Constabulary, and went with the Wanganui and Kai Iwi Cavalry to Patea, arriving there about 6 p.m. Remained at that place the next day, and left for Waihi on Friday at 8 p.m., reaching the redoubt at 2 a.m. Started at daylight and went to the Ketemarai clearing; from thence to Taipaihanui, which village was burnt, took the inland track to Mokoia, on to Manutahi, and arrived at Patea 3 p.m. Not a

Native, or any indication of Natives, were seen. About twenty-five horses and a few head of cattle were brought in; most of them claimed, and given over to settlers at Patea.

Left Patea on Sunday morning at 6 a.m., halted for breakfast at Waitotara, and on arriving opposite the pa at Nukumaru, Natives were to be seen outside.

Riding somewhat in advance of the Cavalry, I received a message stating that a troop of mounted rebels were to be seen galloping in our direction. Skirmishers were immediately sent out to occupy the rising ground and watch their movements.

As my object was to return to camp and not engage the enemy, I retired at a gentle trot,—fire being kept up on both sides till the Okehu was reached, the rebels not coming further than the sand-hills. One horse was badly wounded, and afterwards shot by my order. Captain Finimore's horse received a wound in the shoulder.

The officers and men behaved well under fire, but being volunteers there was not the order and strict discipline that was desirable on such an occasion.

Arrived in camp at 5 p.m.

I have, &c.,

WILLIAM C. LYON, Lieut.-Colonel,
Inspector, Armed Constabulary.

The Hon. Colonel Whitmore.

Enclosure 2 in No. 15.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel McDONNELL to Colonel WHITMORE.

Sir,—

Patea, January 19th, 1869.

I have the honor to report, for the information of the Officer Commanding, that I left here on the afternoon of the 17th instant, with the mounted Natives under Kemp (some sixty in number), Captain Richardson, Ensign McDonnell, and Mr. Booth, R.M., with the purpose of proceeding to Te Ngutu-o-te-manu and destroying it. We reached the redoubt at Waihi about 10 p.m., remained there that night, and proceeded the following morning to Te Ngutu-o-te-manu. From the appearance of the pa when we got there, I should say no one had been there for a fortnight, everything had been stowed or taken away.

The pa is surrounded by a double palisading about twelve feet high, each stake about six inches in diameter. The outer or screen fence is raised two feet off the ground, so as to allow the defenders to fire from the inside without obstruction. This outer fence is away from the inner one, leaving a space between the two of eighteen inches. The inside of the pa is deeply rifle-pitted and staked, and at short distances they have built banks of earth about five feet square and three feet high, and have securely fenced them round with short stakes. The whole of the fencing of the pa is securely lashed with strong vines and supplejacks; around and inside the pa are huge rata trees, from which a deadly fire can be poured upon the assailant, and it was from these trees that the gallant Major Von Tempsky and Captain Buck, with most of the men killed, were struck down. The side or rear of the pa, which is not fenced, slopes away to a small stream a few paces distant, but is next to impassable from the dense mass of undergrowth, vines, &c., creepers that form a jungle.

Te Ngutu is, from its position and the forest that surrounds it, one of the most formidable places I ever knew Natives to hold, and it seems now a miracle to me we did not sustain more loss than we did when we attacked it.

There were some sixty or seventy whares, most of them new, which I caused to be burnt. The palisading I did not destroy; it would have taken more time than we could afford to cut it down and burn it, and should it again be occupied, information as to its formation and strength is now known. Several large potato pits full of potatoes were found; these we uncovered, and the first wet weather will destroy them.

I regret to say the report that reached me about the burning of the bodies of those left on the field is too correct, and a more horrible revolting spectacle could not have been witnessed. We found the remains of two large fires or altars outside the pa, and a small one inside at the foot of a rata tree; the charred remains of human bones and skulls at each of these fires, with other signs horrible to think of, told a sickening and awful tale. I fear the story related of poor Corporal Russell, of No. 3 Division, relative to his being burnt alive, is true, and most likely took place at the foot of the rata tree mentioned above. There is no doubt the dead were partly eaten and partly offered up as a sacrifice by the infamous Titokowaru and his band.

On our way back to Patea the Natives caught twelve horses supposed to belong to the enemy. We went to Otoia (Gentle Annie) and burnt every house there, some eighty in number. Otoia is not such a strong place as one would suppose, but it might be made so by a little labour; there is no fortification there at present.

I have, &c.,

THOS. McDONNELL,
Lieut.-Colonel, and Inspector, A.C.

The Hon. Colonel Whitmore,
Commanding Patea Force.

No. 16.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Head-Quarters, Handley's Farm,
Okehu, 27th January, 1869.

Sir,—I have the honor to inform you that on the 20th instant I moved my head-quarters to Kidd's Farm, Kai Iwi, and sent No. 2 Division, Armed Constabulary, across the stream to Mr. Moore's house. The rest of the force, except the Artillery and Hospital, which remained at Westmere, moved to Woodall's Redoubt on the same day.

On the 21st I sent Lieut.-Colonel Lyon across the Kai Iwi, and commenced to repair the road. Lieut.-Colonel Lyon entrenched himself beyond the bush, close to the road, at a spot named Fort Lyon.

On the 22nd No. 6 Division joined Lieut.-Colonel Lyon, and the Native Volunteer Cavalry, under Wirihana, moved up on the same day. The roadmaking proceeded, and the timber for the bridge was cut in the bush.

On the 23rd all the tools were employed on the road, and the Kai Iwi Cavalry came into line at noon. In reconnoitring to find a suitable camp for them, we discovered the enemy with about 100 men, horse and foot, approaching from the sandhills, apparently with the intention of seizing a few of Mr. Moore's cattle, which were between him and our party. Lieutenant Bryce drove these off under a distant fire from his front men, and drew out his men in skirmishing order, not replying (by my directions) to the enemy's harmless discharges. Meanwhile I sent for parties of Nos. 2 and 3 Divisions, and the men turned out quickly. The enemy perceiving that his fire was not returned, now crossed the valley of the Okehu, and closed upon Lieutenant Bryce's troop. Mr. Bryce, in accordance with my orders, drew off his men, and the infantry moved up. The enemy being now in sight, Sub-Inspector G. McDonnell, dashed forward to meet him, but he declined to stand, and precipitately retreated. Lieut.-Colonel Lyon now coming up, I sent him by a shorter route to try to intercept the fugitives, but they made off without affording Lieut.-Colonel Lyon any opportunity to engage at close quarters. The Arawas and other troops had meanwhile come up, and the Wanganui Cavalry, which I had promised to inspect in town, on learning the approach of the enemy, also moved towards the Kai Iwi. The troops all seemed very anxious to close with the enemy, and were apparently in excellent spirits. After this disappointment we returned to our several quarters, the two volunteer troops encamping for the night on the Kai Iwi, together with No. 1 Division, Armed Constabulary, from Woodall's. Westmere was evacuated in the course of the afternoon, and the Hospital moved to Woodall's. On this day No. 7 Division moved up to Fort Lyon; Major Kemp arrived with a few more of his men, and took command of his force.

On the 24th, being Sunday, I allowed the troops to halt in their respective lines, to wash their clothes. The Volunteer Cavalry, however, came into line beyond the Kai Iwi, on Mr. Moore's run.

On the 25th the road and bridge were proceeded with, and Major Kemp moved on after nightfall through the bush, to the other side of the Kai Iwi.

On the 26th, at daylight, the guides having discovered the enemy beyond our picquets, fired upon him, and in retiring, I regret to say that Constable McKenzie was followed and tomahawked by the enemy, and Mr. Williamson wounded in the leg. The noise of this firing was heard at my head-quarters, then in process of moving to the front; and I pushed on to Lieut.-Colonel Lyon's camp with the Arawas, leaving orders for No. 1 Division to push on from the Kai Iwi. On arriving at Fort Lyon I found that the picquets had been engaged and the troops turned out in support. During a fusillade of half an hour one man had been shot dead on our side, and the enemy, finding our troops about to close with him, had made off into the bush. I at once pushed on with No. 8 and No. 1 Divisions, and arrived at Handley's farm without overtaking him, and only just in time to save the Okehu bridge, which he had barricaded and set on fire. At Mr. Handley's I found the chief Kemp, who told me that his picquets had seen the enemy retiring half an hour before. He had been in the bush himself waylaying a different path, and thus they had escaped unmolested, as his picquet was too weak to discover itself. During the first part of the skirmish two of the enemy are believed to have been killed, but though we have found their blood, as yet their bodies have not been found, as the bush is very thick; none were carried away, however.

I brought up No. 6 Division, under Inspector Roberts, in the course of the afternoon, and having taken up strong positions to cover the road-making parties, I sent back orders to move up all the supplies from the rear that could be required.

A part of the force expected from Poverty Bay, with Lieut.-Colonel St. John and Sub-Inspector Gascoigne, arrived during the day, and fifty-five recruits were sent back to Wanganui, to be embarked for the Waikato. The "Sturt" left in the evening, and may be expected back to-morrow with better-trained men in lieu of the recruits, and more Arawas.

The Hon. the Defence Minister.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 17.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Titokowaru's Pa, Tauranga Ika, 3rd February, 1869.

I have the honor to inform you that this pa has this morning fallen into the hands of the Colonial forces under my command; the enemy having, during the night and early this morning, retreated towards the Waitotara River. I had arrived before the place, and opened my attack yesterday; but, from the difficulty of ascertaining the exact features of the ground, could not invest it before dark. This morning, however, I should have done so, and, indeed, had already given directions with that object, when some scouts discovered that the enemy was in very small force inside. I thereupon directed an advance, and the enemy's rearguard evacuated it before we could overtake them.

The pa is exceedingly strong, and as Titokowaru must have had plentiful supplies, it is difficult to imagine any reason, except fear, for his abandoning it. His preparations for defence were of the most complete description, and no gateways, except underground holes, were left in the palisades. I shelled the pa, with apparently some effect, both yesterday and at daylight this morning, and it is possible that Titokowaru felt that his defences did not protect his men from that kind of fire, and made off in consequence.

The pa is a formidable place, and I am satisfied that, with so much at stake, I should not have been justified in attempting to take it in any other way than that I followed. No troops in the world could have hewn their way through a double row of strong palisades, backed by rifle-pits, and flanked by two-storied erections, such as are constructed in this fortification, defended by excellent shots and desperate men.

Though, as yet, no bodies have been found, I have been shown considerable traces of blood in several spots in and about the work. My own loss, owing to the cover of our trenches, and in spite of the very well directed fire of the enemy, only amounts to one man wounded.

The enemy is in full retreat, followed up by the cavalry and Natives; and as soon as possible the whole force will cross the Waitotara on his trail.

The men are in excellent spirits, and evidently delighted with their success; while I am assured that Titokowaru will lose in prestige and in followers by his failure to carry out his boastful promises.

As there has been no real or rather serious fighting, I think it out of place to mention individuals, and therefore confine myself to acknowledging the cheerful co-operation I have met with from all ranks and corps throughout my operations. Lieut.-Colonel Gorton, however, whose particular duties are not altered by the resistance of the enemy, does deserve that I should specially record the great assistance I have derived from his zealous personal exertions and excellent arrangements.

I trust the Government will be satisfied with this success, which, though less complete than I could have wished, has, I trust, regained possession of the Waitotara Block, and removed the scene of operations further from the settled districts.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. the Defence Minister, Wellington.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

P.S.—I forward this despatch by Captain Finimore, Commanding the Volunteer Cavalry, in recognition of the willing and zealous services of his corps during the late critical circumstances of the district. I commend this officer to your kind protection.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

NOMINAL RETURN of MEN WOUNDED at TAURANGA IKA on 3rd February, 1869.

Corps.	Rank and Name.	Nature of Wound.	Remarks.
No. 1 Division, A.C....	Constable F. Hassard ...	Gunshot wound, scalp ...	Dangerous.

WM. BROWN, Assistant Surgeon, A.C.

No. 18.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Weraroa, 3rd February, 1869.

In continuation of my despatch of this day's date, I have the honor to state that the Cavalry having pushed on to Weraroa took some part in the engagement with the enemy's rear guard, and the Natives under Major Kemp, after which, at my request, Lieutenant Bryce moved with all the Volunteer Cavalry across the Waitotara to Wairoa. Major Kemp, following the fugitives straight from the pa at Tauranga Ika, became separated from the Arawas, but pressing on he came upon the enemy opposite Weraroa, and at once engaged him. He lost one man, but killed five in his skirmish, an account of which is contained in the enclosed report. On his return, as the enemy showed in some force, I detached Lieut.-Colonel Lyon with his division (No. 3), and a sub-division of No. 6 under Inspector Roberts, to continue the engagement. Lieut.-Colonel Lyon, in pursuing the enemy, found himself in very high fern, and being fired upon, had much difficulty in extending his young soldiers. The enemy continuing to fire heavily upon him, I sent on No. 7 to support him, and as I saw he had some wounded, I proceeded myself with Nos. 1 and No. 8 Divisions to the spot. The enemy however had retired, and as the fern was so high as to make any progress laborious, and as both Europeans and Natives were suffering from fatigue (not having slept last night) and hunger, I determined to return to Weraroa for the night.

In the skirmishes of the day we have had three men wounded, besides one Native, Hori, of Kemp's, missing—believed to be killed. In the high fern two of Lieut.-Colonel Lyon's men missed their way, and walked almost into the enemy's camp. The absence of these men was not discovered till my return to camp, and I was parading a force to return to search for them when they happily found their way back.

I shall to-morrow resume the pursuit, and shall prepare to move the whole force to the country beyond Waitotara, which, owing to the difference of the contract for supply, will give a great deal of trouble to the departments.

I enclose casualty lists.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

NOMINAL RETURN of MEN WOUNDED at TE KARAKA, on 4th February, 1869.

Corps.	Rank and Names.	Nature of Wound.	Remarks.
No. 3 Division, A.C.	Constable H. Roache ...	Gunshot wound shoulder & arm	Severe.
"	" Dd. Murray ...	" " groin ...	"
"	" Wm. Timms	" " leg ...	"

WM. BROWN, Assistant Surgeon, A.C.

Enclosure in No. 18.

Copy of a Letter from Major KEMP to Colonel WHITMORE.

SIR,—

Weraroa, 3rd February, 1869.

I have the honor to report that this morning I left Tauranga Ika with thirty (30) of my men on the track of the Hauhaus. We saw footmarks and blood, and presently we came on an encampment where they had slept, the fires being still alive. We then came on to Weraroa, which was occupied by the Wanganui Cavalry; the Hauhaus at that time were firing on the Cavalry. We then charged across the valley. On reaching the heights on the opposite side, I stationed some of my men at different points to keep the road. I went on with ten men, and fell into an ambush of the Hauhaus. They fired at us at a distance of ten yards; we dropped when they fired, and none of us were hit. We then fired, and some of the enemy fell. I wish to bring to your notice the gallant conduct of the following men: Horopapera, half-caste, Eruera, Rotohiko, Hori Rongo, Te One, and Te Moananui. These men rushed into the enemy's lines, and Horopapera and Eruera each killed a man. One of my men, Hori Rongo, is missing; five Hauhaus are known to have been killed.

To Colonel Whitmore.

This is all from

KEMP RANGIHWINUI, Major.

No. 19.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Nukumarū, 6th February, 1869.

I have the honor to inform you that on the 4th I crossed the ravine opposite Waitotara and pushed on to Papatupu, the enemy keeping carefully out of our way. I, at the time, believed that he was retreating towards Okutuku, but I have since ascertained that this was not the case.

Having halted two hours at Papatupu, which is a very bad position and very inaccessible, I collected all the cattle and horses obtainable for some miles beyond up the Waitotara, and returned to Weraroa, under the belief, shared by Kemp and all those who best knew the country, that Titokowaru was making for his own district. In this idea I pushed on the same night and encamped at Te Ori and Wairoa with the greater part of my force, leaving 100 men only at Nukumarū and Weraroa to hold those places. On reaching Wairoa I found that the Volunteer Cavalry had failed to find any traces of the enemy in the open country; and Captain Hawes, who has been constantly reconnoitring, and whose local knowledge enabled him to give a good opinion, assured me that he believed that every track, except one far inland which comes out at Okutuku, had been searched, without any trail being discovered. Accordingly I at once sent orders to halt all the troops then on the march, and on the 5th, with the Arawas and Kemp's Natives, proceeded to examine the inland track described by both Kemp and Captain Hawes. At Moturoa I was met by Lieut.-Colonel Fraser, and collected what could be found of the remains of the unfortunate men who were killed in the action of the 7th November last. These were so much burned as to be quite beyond recognition, but have at least received a christian burial. The pa proved infinitely larger and stronger than I had believed, being indeed more extensive than that of Tauranga Ika; and when it is remembered that there was nothing existing there prior to the 2nd November, the number of the enemy may be inferred to be large, from the amount of labour such a construction must have required.

This pa and that of Tauranga Ika have now both been destroyed completely, and the palisades burned.

From Moturoa we proceeded to Okutuku searching the bush carefully, but no signs of the enemy could be found. At Okutuku there is no pa, but considerable stores of potatoes were destroyed by the troops.

I now decided that it was useless to press further towards the Patea River, and that the enemy had retreated up the Waitotara into the bush, a conclusion to which I arrived the more readily that I perceived fires in that direction. Moreover, two settlers who had after my departure imprudently ventured to Papatupu were very nearly paying for their temerity with their lives. They had collected some stock, and were returning when they were fired upon, and after many extraordinary escapes, in which nothing but great coolness and courage supported them, they finally returned in safety to the camp.

From their report I feel sure that the enemy is to some extent scattered, but still in considerable force in the ranges above the Waitotara. Acting on this I have recrossed the river, and shall proceed to scout their positions, while I provide for the safety of the district against sudden raids, which may, I think, be apprehended.

To bring this campaign now to a close, the enemy must be hunted out of the bush at this place. This will be an operation of great difficulty, requiring prudence, caution, and daring in those who conduct the columns in the bush, and endurance as well as courage in those who follow them. For such operations much of the force under my command is utterly useless. I have therefore at once dismissed the corps of Wanganui Cavalry to their homes, and desired Lieutenant Bryce to return and take post at his old position, to secure the Upper Kai Iwi.

The Europeans will afford me but few men fit to travel in the dense bush, but I shall hope to select 150 for a light column; and I have fifty-eight Arawas, and may be able to employ Kemp's mounted Natives on foot. I earnestly desire to draw the attention of the Government to the absolute necessity of collecting a good reliable Native force to carry on the bush service. I am quite prepared to reduce the European force to a large extent; but to train it to carry on such a warfare as this must become till Titokowaru is dislodged, would take much longer time than perhaps is known to Government. Such Natives as Hunia's or Pete's would not, except in rare instances, be of much service, and, unless detribalized, of none. I can only suggest the extreme desirability of hastening recruits from Ngatiporou, Arawa, or Ngapuhi, or any tribe which is not connected with Titokowaru's men, except the Ngatikahungunu. The Ngaiterangi would do, and the Ngatiporou would do best for this service; but such troops alone (unaided by such appliances as are inadmissible in civilized war) can discover and follow Titokowaru to his present retreat without great risk of a calamitous disaster.

I am proceeding to form a flying column, and to discharge largely from the European portion of my force.

The Hon. Defence Minister, Wellington.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 20.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Nukumarū, 9th February, 1869.

On the 6th I returned to Nukumarū, where I was visited by Commodore Lambert, who could not, however, see in my future operations any opportunity to employ the Royal Navy under his instructions, a view with which I coincided.

The weather of the 6th and 7th was unfavourable, but on the 8th I sent back Lieut.-Colonel Lyon with a force to protect the Kai Iwi in the possible event of raids being made in that direction upon the settlers.

On the 8th, also, I proceeded with the Native force to reconnoitre, and entering the bush not far from Mr. Lomax's, this side of Pakaraka, made our way till we struck the main trail of Titokowarū's retreat. This we followed to the Waitotara which unfortunately proved to be flooded. We saw the enemy's horse beyond the river but no sign of his camp. This day, also, I learned that Captain Hawes (whose post at Wairoa I had strengthened, to enable him to move) had burned Putahi, and examined the country without finding any tracks, but from Patea I hear that some Natives have been seen.

To-day Lieut.-Colonel McDonnell and Inspector Roberts are out prosecuting the search still more closely, and I hope that they may obtain some indication of Titokowarū's retreat.

The great want now is a reliable Native force. The Arawas are too few, and Kemp's Natives are evidently cowed by the sight of the mutilated body of their comrade.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. the Minister for Colonial Defence,
Wellington.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 21.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Werarōa, 19th February, 1869.

On the 16th instant I formed a column, consisting of the force as per margin,* and directed Major Kemp, Captain Swindley, and Captain Hawes to arrange the best direction for its operations about Okutuku and the Momahaki, with a view of intercepting parties from Titokowarū's camp, which by that time I had ascertained to be in the broken country between Papatupu and Okutuku.

On the 17th I directed Lieut.-Colonel McDonnell to move across the Waitotara, and to endeavour to gain some knowledge of the ground and the enemy's movements from the other (inland) side. Lieut.-Colonel McDonnell made his march without opposition and reported that the enemy had certainly fallen back from the Waitotara to a gorge of a stream running into the Momahaki.

On the 18th the chief Kemp returned, having examined Putahi without obtaining any trace of the enemy, and having only come upon evidences of his being in the vicinity near the old pa at Ngamotu. Here during the late rains he had had a strong party digging potatoes, doubtless that which fired on Mr. Monrad.

Kemp left Sub-Inspector Swindley at Wairoa, his men having been out two consecutive nights, and returned himself to Nukumarū early in the forenoon of the 18th. Meanwhile all the troops were employed in making dray and pack roads for my further operations. These are conducted on the principle of making a dray road in continuation of that which I have already made or repaired from Kai Iwi to Wairoa; but of making only pack-horse roads for any movements into the bush on my right flank, as the ground there is too broken for dray roads without much labour, and the work cannot be of any use hereafter to peaceful settlers.

Lieut.-Colonel McDonnell's division is encamped at Te Karaka, and I directed him yesterday to make a pack road to Areahi. This he was engaged upon when at 3 p.m. the noise of musketry beneath him and across the Waitotara attracted his attention. He instantly turned out his division and hurried to the spot, when it turned out that a party of his men foraging on their own account for peaches had fallen into an ambuscade, and out of ten men but three escaped. I send you this officer's own report of this unfortunate occurrence.

The men, I am happy to say, do not seem to have been cowed by the loss of their comrades, and indeed were desirous of pushing on at night to the rebel camp to obtain revenge. As I had neither guides nor a Native force available, I could not run the risk of any worse mishap, so I, a little unwillingly, abandoned the idea. This morning, however, I recalled the column from Wairoa and moved No. 8 A.C. (Arawas), and Kemp's Natives to Areahi, bringing my own head-quarters to Werarōa, and sending Nos. 6 and 7 Divisions to Te Karaka, above Areahi. I pushed on the work as fast as I could, and have almost completed a pack-horse road to Areahi, with one or two bridges, while I have got the material for a punt carried by the men to Te Karaka. While this was being done I directed Major Kemp and the Arawas to cross the Waitotara and select a ground for their own camp to-morrow. I directed Lieut.-Colonel McDonnell also to proceed in support, partly in the hope of obtaining some tidings of the missing men of his division.

Scarcely had the Ngatihau and Arawas reached the old clearing, close to the peach grove which had proved so disastrous a temptation to our men, than the enemy opened fire. The Arawas, however,

* Under Major Kemp—60 mounted Native Volunteers. Under Sub-Inspector Swindley—30 Volunteers, No. 8 A.C.; 25 Volunteers, No. 1 A.C.; 9 mounted men, No. 1 A.C.; 12, the Corps of Guides. Under Captain Hawes—50 Wairoa Garrison. Total, 186.

were not disposed to engage the enemy in that manner ; but raising the cry of their tribe, they and the Ngatihau led by Kemp, rushed forward to close. The Hauhaus would not face them, though their numbers were about equal. On the contrary, they turned and fled, pursued at some disadvantage by our Natives, who did not know the ground. Lieut.-Colonel McDonnell's division showed the greatest eagerness to engage, and hurried forward also, but I regret to say the enemy escaped into the dense forest, which is only a few chains distant, and, dispersing in every direction, could not be punished for his audacity.

I am sorry that yesterday's misfortune compels me to precipitate my advance, for it is evident that the greatest familiarity with the bush and speed of foot alone can effectually punish these advanced parties. But after I meet the Ngatihau to-morrow, I shall be able to judge what Native force I can rely upon ; and Mr Gundry's return cannot be long delayed, when I shall, at all events, have him again with his division, which I regard as a great advantage.

I abandon any hope of the Ngatiporou being in time for the present operations, and shall not wait or delay at all for them.

I am quite convinced that the enemy is really quite over-estimated in point of good shooting and courage ; but I fear he does not himself place much confidence in these things, and means to try to confine himself to ambuscades and defensive fighting in ground he thoroughly knows. It is a very delicate matter to prevent the men from going about without proper precaution, and yet to maintain a sufficiently high opinion of themselves, or low one of the enemy, to attack at once whenever fired upon in fair ground. Nevertheless, I am better satisfied after narrowly noticing the men yesterday and to-day, and, I think, notwithstanding yesterday's ambuscade, they will not lose any opportunity of closing that can be obtained for them.

I should allude to a rumour which has been brought to me that Titokowaru has written for reinforcements everywhere, and that he designs, if compelled to retreat, to retire upon Waitara.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. Colonel Haultain, Wellington.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

Enclosure in No. 21.

Copy of a Letter from Lieut.-Colonel McDONNELL to Colonel WHITMORE.

SIR,—

Camp, Karaka Flat, 19th February, 1869.

I regret to have to report for your information that a party consisting of one sergeant and nine men went out on a foraging expedition yesterday. They crossed the river in a small canoe, a few hundred yards from the foot of the hill where we are encamped, and leaving two of their number in charge of the canoe, went up the bank, and made for a small peach grove a short distance off and near the bush. They had just commenced plucking peaches when a heavy volley was fired into them from two sides. Two of the men made off to their right, and succeeded in reaching some scrub, the others made straight back for the canoe, hotly pursued by the Hauhaus who were in force. Apparently, they succeeded in reaching the bank of the river, and were getting into the canoe, when the Hauhaus came on the top of the bank and fired into them, and then closed with their tomahawks.

I had just returned from the party who were working at the hill, and was in my tent when I heard the first volley. I collected some men in a moment, and leaving others to follow, ran down to where the men had crossed, and opened a heavy fire on the Hauhaus, who returned it sharply for a few minutes and then retired. One of the men who escaped met us on the bank of the river, and was slightly wounded ; he had swam across. Another man was found on this side shot through the head (dead). The canoe we recovered, and crossed with some twenty-five men and went to the peach grove, and could see no sign of any of the missing, or any trace of blood.

From the tracks in and out of the bush, I placed the ambuscade down to from seventy to one hundred Natives.

Sergeant Menzies (late 57th Regiment) was found in the river frightfully mutilated, his head split open, and his left leg cut off and taken away.

You will perceive, by the enclosed return, that besides two men killed there are five missing, but I think these were either shot or drowned in the river. I will search for them to-day.

The foraging party who were out had their rifles with them, and their expense pouches ; their large pouches were left in camp (with the exception of that of Lance-Corporal George Horspool, which he had with him). There are eight rifles missing, but I think most will be found as having been dropped in the river.

The manner in which the division turned out does great credit ; not a moment was lost in going to the rescue, and I feel convinced that the lives of at least two of their comrades were saved by their exertions.

Sub-Inspectors Pitt and Gascoigne, on hearing the firing, made at once for the spot with a number of their men to render any assistance they could, and I beg to thank them for their exertions.

I have, &c.,

Colonel Whitmore, Head-Quarters,
Nukumaru.

THOS. McDONNELL, Lieut.-Colonel,
and Inspector Commanding No. 2 Division.

NOMINAL ROLL of MEN of No. 2 Division, A.C., attacked by the Enemy at Karaka Flat, 18th February, 1869.

Rank and Names.	When Enlisted.	Where Enlisted.	Remarks.
Sergeant George Menzies ...	Dec. 2, 1868	Auckland ...	Killed.
Lance-Corporal Geo. Horspool	Dec. 8, ,,	Melbourne ...	Missing.
Constable Connell Boyle ...	Dec. 13, ,,	Greymouth ...	Killed.
„ Abel Barris ...	Oct. 29, ,,	Wanganui ...	Missing.
„ Matthew Clowen ...	Dec. 12, ,,	Westmere ...	„
„ Jas. Banks ...	Dec. 8, ,,	Melbourne ...	„
„ John Howe ...	Dec. 2, ,,	Ross ...	„
„ Robt. Henderson ...	Oct. 17, ,,	Auckland ...	Returned.
„ John McEvoy ...	Jan. 23, 1869	Woodall's Redoubt	„ (wounded slightly.)
„ Alfred Wakeford ...	Nov. 20, 1868	Nelson ...	„

No. 22.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters' Bivouac, 7th March, 1869.

I have the honor to report that I returned to my command and reached Weraroa on the 4th. The troops had been unable to re-occupy the positions from which I had been compelled to withdraw them when the flood came on. The punt, however, through the great exertions of Lieut.-Colonel Herrick, had been found at the Waitotara Heads, and after being taken to pieces had been carted to Weraroa and carried by the men back to Poronui—its former position—and reconstructed and secured. Lieut.-Colonel Lyon had made every arrangement for moving on, and no time had been lost.

On the 5th the troops returned to their former posts, and made more than a mile of road. The valley had been all under water, and the trees were marked with mud to a height of from four to ten feet, and the rough bridge, begun while you were here, was still under water. All the creeks were still swollen, and I therefore placed bridges and culverts fit for pack transport over each. This night the troops encamped in and at the edge of the bush, and I gave orders for a general advance next day.

Some eighty Wanganui Natives had meanwhile come up, and I divided the Natives into two columns, the Arawas under Captain Gundry forming one, and the Wanganuis under Major Kemp forming the other.

On the 7th the Arawas ascended the range to the right of the bush valley, and took rations for three days. Captain Gundry had orders to follow up the trail of the enemy if he struck it, and to depend on me for support. Major Kemp's column moved to the end of the road, and thence ascended to the hills to the left of the valley. This column I accompanied myself. The Europeans were all placed in the bush to render the track passable for pack animals. Lieut.-Colonel Lyon remained at Poronui to protect the passage of the Waitotara. Lieut.-Colonel Fraser took charge of Nos. 1, 2, and 6 Divisions in the bush. Major Kemp's column searched the country carefully, and could not find any position held by the enemy, though on the track to Okutuku we found seven horses, among which was the wellknown white one stolen some time ago from Kemp himself, and a stretcher, on which a wounded or dead man had been carried away.

On the morning of the 7th I returned with Kemp's Column to the end of the road, feeling certain that either the enemy had abandoned this part of the country, or that he was in position between the line of Captain Gundry's march or my own. I therefore took Nos. 1 and 2 Armed Constabulary as a support, and pushed on some miles in the bush. At length we reached a Native encampment, where I fell upon Captain Gundry's traces of this morning, and turned to my left to support him. On reaching the summit of the range, I found he had crossed in the direction of my camp of yesterday. I therefore satisfied myself by pushing on a little further to a point from which I could see the country that the enemy was gone, and then sending the Armed Constabulary back to their bivouacs, I crossed the valleys to my former halting-place, where I found the Arawas awaiting me. They had disinterred one dead body at a Native village, evidently shot from a long distance, probably in the late skirmishes, and had found a trail leading towards Okutuku, close by this place.

I feel sure the enemy has moved, probably to avoid being swamped in the flood, and to-morrow move on with the Native Column, and leave the Europeans of Nos. 1, 2, and 6 to open the track to Te Ori Ori, which will render all this difficult country accessible from the Wairoa, and make the labour of the troops of practical military use hereafter, if required. This work will, I think, occupy two days, during which I shall explore the Okutuku district, and endeavour to carry on the trail of the enemy. I feel satisfied that the whole force has moved, and that I do not endanger the Waitotara by moving on, while I confess it is most satisfactory to get the enemy out of a place in which he could only have been attacked under every possible disadvantage, and where a single day's rain would have compelled me to stop my operations.

The troops have shown a marked improvement in moving through the bush, which I feel justified in reporting, and the Natives seem to work cordially.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 23.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Norman's Flat, 10th March, 1869.

In continuation of my last report, I have the honor to inform you that acting on the conclusions at which I arrived on the 7th instant, I proceeded on the 8th to explore and lay off a line by which the troops might emerge from the bush and reach Wairoa; while Major Kemp, with a strong Native column, made a last reconnaissance to the front, but inclining towards Okutuku. This movement did not result in finding the enemy in position, though his traces were found moving in a northerly direction.

Meanwhile leaving Lieut.-Colonel Fraser to cut the road I had laid off, I had myself returned to Weraroa, where I made the necessary arrangements for the removal of my whole force, except the garrison (fifty) of the post, with my stores and material, to the Patea District, which from the smallness of my available transport required some consideration. Here I received from Lieut.-Colonel St. John, at Patea, a report to the effect that the enemy was in force towards Putahi and New Taranaki, which confirmed me in my opinion that he was retreating.

The 9th proved to be another very wet day, and as I was anxious lest the Waitotara should again overflow its banks and dam up its tributaries, inundating the whole country, I sent to hasten the arrangements made the evening before, and to recall Kemp and the Native Column, which I wished to be present when its tents were removed. Notwithstanding the inclemency of the weather, Lieut.-Colonel Fraser made his way easily to Wairoa, fording a large swamp only just in time to prevent being stopped by it. Major Kemp and Captain Gundry returned to Weraroa, to which place Lieut.-Colonel Lyon also brought his division and the punt, so that by night the bush posts and road were entirely evacuated, and some of the tents and stores had been forwarded to Wairoa. The punt also had been floated down the Waitotara, and was again established at Perekama, where Lieut.-Colonel Lyon and the Arawas encamped. I myself moved to Wairoa.

On the 10th I moved Nos. 1, 2, and 6 Divisions, Armed Constabulary, to Norman's Flat, above Oika, at daylight, and by sunset the Native Column and No. 4 Armed Constabulary, with all the tents, had come up from Weraroa. The drays had however to return and bring up stores, some from Perekama, some by the beach from Weraroa, so that Lieut.-Colonel Lyon's rear-guard could not come up this day. At 5 p.m. Lieut.-Colonel St. John, whom I had sent for, arrived at my camp, and informed me that the escort bringing up supplies for this force had been attacked at the Whenuakura ford, and that the enemy was clearly encamped on the left bank of the Patea River. The escort under Lieutenant Hunter had manfully beaten back its assailants, but great delay had been experienced from the flooded state of the river, consequent upon the incessant rains of the last short time. I conceive that the enemy experiences the same difficulty, and is delayed by the same causes; but I have sent to have such boats as are procurable dragged from Patea, and shall, if the weather allows me and the drays return, move at dawn to-morrow to Patea, where I propose to make arrangements for getting rid of my baggage and coming to close quarters with the enemy. I cannot force him to action if he continually retreats, but in such weather as we are experiencing at present it cannot be easy for Maoris to move. He has hitherto, by burying himself deeper in the bush at each step I made towards him, succeeded in avoiding any general engagement. And as I am resolved not to force my men into unknown and densely-wooded spots without some certainty of being able to close with him after his first volley from his prepared ambuscades are fired, I regard his retreat into a better-known country, and out of a bush through which he has been persistently followed, as of great advantage to us. He has now not only found that he can be followed without danger to us, into the most difficult fastnesses of his district, but he has experienced the inconvenience of subsisting so large a body of people in the heart of the forest. I anxiously hope these considerations may tempt him to risk an action, for I am much more satisfied than I have ever been with the spirit of the men and their bearing when placed in the bush; while the Native force, composed of so many different elements and tribes, appears to be equally eager to engage.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. the Defence Minister, Wellington.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 24.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Patea, 12th March, 1869.

In continuation of my last report, I have the honor to inform you that yesterday I marched from Norman's Flat with all the drays I could collect at Wairoa (3), and brought my force to the Whenuakura mouth, where, by means of the two boats I had directed Lieut.-Colonel St. John to place there, I crossed the men and horses. Happening to find four drays on the beach, I had them dragged through the stream, and with these completed the removal of my camp. The work was hard on the men, the last division not arriving till 10 or 11 o'clock at night.

The transport drays, both those loaded with ammunition and other stores, and those returning to bring up the hospital, &c., having gone round by the Waitotara Heads, were, in consequence of the heavy floods, separated from me altogether, and they had to be taken back to Weraroa to be dragged down the hill by the men, and all their contents packed in the same way and brought across by the barrel punt at Perekama. The new road at Weraroa, which is a very heavy work, is not yet completed for dray traffic; but, as I have left a garrison of fifty men at that post with orders to finish it, I trust that communication may soon be established for wheel transport, available in all weathers.

On my arrival at this post, I received the reports of the attack on the escort of yesterday, and enclose Lieutenant Hunter's report. The men appeared to have behaved bravely, and Lieutenant Hunter deserves every credit for his soldierly conduct and arrangements. I conceive that as the enemy allowed several persons to pass without molestation, and waited for the escort, that his design

was to impede my movements by depriving me of supplies. If this surmise is too civilized a motive for his movement, it is very difficult to understand why he permitted so many individuals, travelling almost alone, to pass the beach, and reserved his attack for the strongest party likely to pass. The only casualty suffered by the escort was the loss of one, if not two, horses. Of these, one was the horse of the contract shepherd; and the enemy, on observing it fall, ran up, and possessed himself of the saddle.

No. 3 Division came up to-day, and to-night I shall move at 9 p.m. in two columns to attack the enemy, who has not, I think, as yet passed the Patea River, which is in flood.

I am in great hopes that I may now come up with Titokowaru's women and baggage, which he will doubtless defend. It appears that, having followed him steadily through the bush and through the several new tracks he has opened, he has at last determined to relinquish his hold of the whole district he had possession of, and to fall back on his own country.

I trust and believe that I leave no enemy behind; and as I move in light order, I shall be able, with the garrison of Patea, to muster 600 effectives inclusive of the Native force, for operations, until I have to establish posts of communication. To avoid lessening this, which is no more than sufficient, I have ordered the Veterans to take up the post at Nukumaru, and shall bring forward the men thus liberated to form a garrison at a more advanced post. Owing to sickness and other causes from which this force has lost men, I would recommend the careful enrolment of any men who may offer to engage up to the number of 100 men.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. Defence Minister, Wellington.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

Enclosure in No. 24.

Copy of a Letter from Lieutenant HUNTER to the OFFICER COMMANDING CAMP, Patea.

SIR,—

Advance Camp, Patea, 11th March, 1869.

I have the honor to inform you, for your information, that the convoy from Patea to Wairoa, on the 10th instant, of which I was in charge, was attacked by the rebel Maoris at the mouth of the Whenuakura River.

By keeping up a steady fire on the point of attack, and throwing out a few skirmishers to outflank the enemy, we were enabled to dislodge them from their position, which was occupied by our skirmishers, until I considered all danger had passed in consequence of the ready assistance I received in reinforcements from the Advance camp, Patea.

I have, &c.,

JAS. HUNTER, Lieut.,

Patea Rifle Volunteers.

The Officer Commanding Camp, Patea.

No. 25.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Kakaramea, Patea, 14th March, 1869.

I marched on the evening of the 12th instant, in two columns respectively little under 400 and 200 strong, by both banks of the Patea River. I myself accompanied the larger column, which was more especially intended to attack the enemy, and reached the jungle-side at daybreak, without being discovered. Lieut.-Colonel St. John commanded the left column, and also reached the bush early at Otoia (Gentle Annie), so that there was good reason for hoping that he had been unperceived. His object was to intercept the enemy's retreat.

As we approached the enemy's camp, which we had discovered only by such indications as might be studied in the chase, but are seldom relied upon in warfare, we threw off our packs and prepared to attack the position. It proved to be on high ground commanding the whole open country from Putahi to Kakaramea, on the range above the Patea River. Otoia must have been some miles below stream, as only the back of Gentle Annie was visible. The spot was not a kainga of former times, but simply a camp chosen for its suitability by Titokowaru. A heavy mist unfortunately covered the spot, rendering it impossible to distinguish objects at a few yards' distance. This circumstance, which favoured our approach, embarrassed us very much during the attack, and prevented Titokowaru's defeat from being the total destruction of his force. I divided the force into two columns of attack, with a reserve. The right column was commanded by Major Kemp, with his own troop and Native Militia, No. 1 A.C., under Sub-Inspector Gascoigne, in support. The left, by Captain Gundry, consisted of No. 8; No. 2 A.C., under Sub-Inspector Scannell, supported him.

I gave the word to advance at about 6 o'clock, and both columns moved forward briskly. Unluckily the sentry, while escaping, was fired upon by the left column, and their shots, which but for the mist would not have saved Titokowaru, did, as it turned out, give him a timely alarm. Unable to see the way, and almost immediately fired upon with great precision by the enemy's guard or picquet, which turned out with great alacrity, the Arawas of No. 8 and No. 2 now moved forward under great disadvantages, and ultimately were compelled to halt, holding their ground till the mist cleared off. The right column also pressed forward to what proved to be within but a few yards of the camp, but was also obliged to lie down and take cover from the same cause and with the same object. I must observe, too, that the fire from the rear, which sometimes in so dark a mist could not be repressed, was so trying to the men in front that I think the Colony may be proud of the spirit and discipline which, after a fatiguing night-march, enabled them to hold their own with constancy under such a trial, and dash forward directly they got the word.

I regret to say that during this interval we had to sustain many losses, hit from points which we could not see, but which proved afterwards to have been prepared for the purpose. At first the men thought these to have been shot from the rear.

At length the mist happily lifted, and Major Kemp, whom I sent round to the right, reported the enemy's camp close by. I ordered a general advance, and Major Kemp followed by the whole of his men, from our right flank rushed into that side, while No. 1 descended directly on the front, and the Arawas, with No. 2, against whom the resistance was the most protracted, at length drove the enemy past his position, and entered from the left.

Major Kemp, allowing his men little time to plunder the camp, pushed on with his own men, the Guides, and No. 8, driving the enemy before him.

After about an hour, I had the satisfaction of hearing Lieut.-Colonel St. John's men open on some of the fugitives, and shortly afterwards I collected the force and bivouacked. At about noon Major Kemp returned with the party which had pressed farthest in pursuit, bringing with him two women prisoners, and having overtaken and killed several wounded fugitives, though the bush was so thick and country so precipitous that he had been unable to overtake the main body. He had prevented them from crossing at the main ford, but the tribe of Ngatiruanui are celebrated as the best bushmen, except perhaps Ngatiporou and Uriwera, in the Island, and are on their own land, so that Kemp's Natives and the Arawas, only some of whom have a general knowledge of the country, could not overtake men flying for their lives with such advantages in favour of their escape.

The behaviour of our men has been excellent, both Natives and Europeans striving to do their best, and showing the greatest desire and impatience to close with the enemy, who on the other hand, finding for how short a time he could prevent being grappled with by our troops, fled precipitately directly the partial lifting of the fog enabled our men to see where to charge him. The cheers which rang through the forest when his camp was taken will prove, I confidently venture to predict, the knell of Titokowaru's influence on this coast. He has escaped with comparatively light loss, though he has left seven or eight dead on the ground at no very great distance; but he has lost all his camp, bell-tents, baggage, many arms, saddles, tools of every description, and even a very great many commonly used pipes, so great was the panic which must have taken him. A great quantity of food, fresh meat and potted meat, fruit, potatoes, clothes, blankets, almost everything down to Tomahawks and Maori spears, fell into the hands of our men. I learn from the prisoners that Titokowaru was himself present and narrowly escaped, having had to swim the river; that his force consisted of 400 "guns," and was therefore fully equal to my own in point of number; that they only heard of my approach from the sentry, and that great dissensions prevail in the camp since Titokowaru's failure to carry out his promises and retreat from Tauranga Ika. Mr. Booth has obtained a great deal of political information of value, which may, however, be thus summarized:—The rebels clearly have not been in communication with the Government Natives, as they were ignorant of many things of interest to them. They have suffered considerable desertions, to the extent of about 200 men.

I have recrossed the Patea and have encamped at Kakaramea. The Natives are out to-day searching the bush on the north bank of the river beyond Otoia, and I shall judge from Major Kemp's report what course to pursue.

In conclusion, I wish to say that the behaviour of all ranks was so good that I am unable as yet to select for especial praise or decoration any individual of the force, but I must acknowledge my obligation to Lieut.-Colonel Lyon, who loyally supported me, and by his personal influence with the men prevented that disbanding of divisions which in the bush is so often the consequence of the eagerness of the men to join those who happen to be first engaged. I must also thank the chief, Major Kemp, for his great assistance to me and loyal co-operation, no less than the example he set his men; and Captain Gundry, commanding No. 8, Arawa Division, who led his men into the bush in a manner which was most creditable, and I regret to add has lost his brother, who has since died of wounds received while fighting gallantly at his side.

I wish also to thank the officers of my staff, Captain Birch Brigade-Major, and Sub-Inspector Swindley, commanding the Guides and acting as Aid-de-camp; Messrs. Booth, R.M., who kindly accompanied me; and Preece, my interpreter.

I must not fail to thank Assistant-Surgeon Walker, the only medical officer available, and who was with my column. The attention of this gentleman to the wounded, and the intrepid manner in which he has on so many occasions exposed himself in most dangerous positions to the enemy's fire in dressing the wounded have often before, as on this occasion, when not in my power to thank him specially attracted my admiration.

Amongst the plunder obtained at this engagement, some trophies have been recovered from the enemy. Among these was the saddle he took from the shepherd during the late attack on the escort when his horse was shot, and the revolver taken from Hori who was killed at the Karaka flats, together with several other revolvers and pistols known to have been taken from us in former engagements.

I believe this action will prove to have left little else but pursuit in small parties to be done on this coast in order to stamp out the embers of the rebellion, and it is therefore with deep regret that I learned on the field, by the arrival of your despatch, that the chief Ropata and his hapu, who were actually on their voyage in the "St. Kilda" to join me, had been induced by representations made to them at Napier to decline to leave the East Coast. At this stage of this campaign, with the enemy dispersed and flying for his life, it is impossible to exaggerate the value of the assistance so intelligent a chief as Ropata could have afforded, at the head of the bravest hapu of the best bush tribe in New Zealand. If, owing to our great difficulties in carrying out rapid pursuits in the deep jungle, Titokowaru escapes for some time the punishment his atrocities deserve, not only is it possible that he may hereafter again give trouble, but he will certainly be more difficult to reach or punish in the fastnesses to which he will make for shelter. If the Ngatiporou are unavailable, and hounds to carry the trail considered to be improper agents for that purpose, I would suggest that some Australian blacks should be engaged to supply what only very great practice can give to Europeans, and what I have not got in this force—the faculty for tracking fugitives in the bush.

I enclose the Casualty Roll, which I regret has been severe.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

Enclosure in No. 25.

Copy of a Letter from Surgeon HOOPER to Colonel WHITMORE.

SIR,—

Patea Field Hospital, 14th March, 1869.

I have the honor to forward you a return of the men wounded in action on the 13th instant, and have much pleasure in assuring you that, although many of the wounds are of a severe character, I have every reason for believing that the wounded, with one exception, will all do well.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. Colonel Whitmore.

C. HOOPER, Surgeon,
Patea Field Force.

RETURN of MEN WOUNDED in Action on the 13th day of March, 1869.

Rank and Name.	Injuries received.	Remarks.
No. 1 Division A.C.—		
Sergeant R. Shepherd ...	Gunshot wound in the face ...	Severe.
Lance-Corporal W. Guthrie ...	Gunshot wound in the face ...	Severe.
Constable T. Kelly ...	Gunshot wound in the foot ...	Severe.
Constable S. Black ...	Gunshot wound right side and left leg	Dangerous.
No. 2 Division A.C.—		
Constable C. Watt ...	Gunshot wound in the left leg and thigh	Severe.
Constable J. Langford ...	Gunshot wound in both hands and neck	Severe.
Constable J. Kennedy ...	Gunshot wound in right thigh	Slight.
Corps of Guides—		
T. Fleurs ...	Gunshot wound in the left side	Dangerous.
No 8. Division A.C.—		
Corporal F. Gundry ...	Wounded in the intestines ...	Fatal (since dead).
Buonaparte ...	Wounded in the left side ...	Dangerous.
Haihana Whakatau and two others	Slightly wounded ...	Doing well.
Kemp's Natives—		
1 man ...	Slightly wounded ...	Doing well.

C. HOOPER, Surgeon,
Patea Field Force.

LIST of KILLED at the Action of the 13th March, at Otauto.

No. 1 Division A.C.	...	...	Constable Bath.
No. 2 Division A.C.	...	...	Constable Smith.
No. 8 Division A.C.	...	...	Constable Stephenson.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 26.

Copy of a Letter from Lieut.-Colonel HARRINGTON to the Hon. Dr. POLLEN.

(No. 28-69.)

SIR,—

Tauranga, 16th March, 1869.

I have the honor to acquaint you that from the information I have received from three separate quarters, I have every reason to believe that an attack will be made immediately on this place. I have withdrawn the detachment from the blockhouse at Pye's Pa, and have determined to hold the peninsula from here to the Gate Pa only.

I have called in all the out-settlers, and have placed the Militia and Volunteer Cavalry on pay, my whole force consisting of 24 cavalry and 104 infantry.

As this place is open to attack from so many points I am compelled to have every man on guard and picquet every night. The Arawas are all fully employed in their own country, and there is no probability of their being able to render us any assistance, as Te Kooti is now marching on them. I consider it absolutely necessary that my force should be reinforced, for with so many women and children to protect I should be unable to leave the vicinity of the redoubt to engage the enemy. Captain Skeet has volunteered to go up to Auckland and bring down some of his corps, the Auckland Engineers.

A deputation of the inhabitants of this place have solicited me to urge you to use your influence to have a company of the 18th Royal Irish sent here. I have given notice that any women and children who wish to go to Auckland may have a free passage per "Tauranga," but that the Government do not undertake to maintain them after arrival in Auckland.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. Dr. Pollen, Auckland.

PHILIP HARRINGTON,
Lieut.-Colonel, Commanding Tauranga District.

No. 27.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Patea, 19th March, 1869.

I have the honor to report that on the 14th instant Major Kemp explored the right bank of the Patea River, and being Sunday, I allowed the rest of the troops to rest. The enemy, "headed" by our men, was compelled to ascend the Patea over very bad ground, and I was not sorry to spare my men a march in pursuit, which could evidently be saved by waiting till they crossed, as they were certain to do without being pursued. On the 15th I moved in two columns, Major Kemp and the Arawas crossing by the ferry I had established at Hukatere, proceeding only far enough to satisfy themselves that the enemy had really crossed the Patea, and then returning and entering the bush behind Mokoia. The other column which I accompanied took post at Manutahi in bivouac.

On the 16th, Lieut.-Colonel Lyon, with a strong detachment, patrolled the country towards Taumaha, but failed to discover traces of the enemy. Later in the day Major Kemp reached the same point, having fallen in with traces of the enemy, and reporting him in full retreat towards Whakamara.

I now made up Major Kemp's column to 350 men by bringing out all the Wanganui and Arawa Natives, who, for various reasons, had returned to camp at Patea, and adding sixty Europeans, volunteers from the Armed Constabulary, under Acting Sub-Inspectors R. Watts and Northcroft. By 1 p.m. this column had entered the bush in the direction of Whakamara, with three days' food.

At 10 p.m. Major Kemp reported that he had come up with the enemy, and that, as a strong pa had been some time ago built in the bush near the kainga, he thought it desirable that further force should be brought up to surround it. Lieut.-Colonel Lyon, who commanded in my absence, immediately pushed on all the Constabulary, some 250 to 300 in all, and reached Major Kemp, after a fatiguing march, by daylight. I myself arrived about the same time, when we were evidently not known to be in the vicinity.

Titokowaru and others were heard haranguing the people, and lamenting their great losses at Otauto, and the women were holding a tangi all night. Major Kemp and the Arawas made a very long detour to get to the rear, which cost many hours. Meanwhile, unfortunately, a mounted scout rode almost into our hands, and, finding the risk he had run, fired his revolver and galloped away. Our men did not fire for fear of giving further alarm. Soon after the Hauhau scout in the bush discharged his piece, and the enemy must have at once made off. Our advance was made at once, but the enemy was gone. The troops were much fatigued, and disgusted to find that the enemy had not stood in the pa, which, though there, had not been occupied; but the light column, after cooking, resumed its march, with the determination to close with the enemy in whatever position he stood, as he is evidently panic-stricken. Whakamara is a place never before visited by troops, and even settlers have not been allowed to go there. It is a very large kainga, and had a very elaborate topmast flagstaff on it, which, of course, I cut down. The troops, being without food or blankets, could not follow the enemy, except the light column, but they halted and occupied the whares, obtaining a supper of pigs and potatoes.

All the force was disappointed at failing to have a brush with the enemy, and it may be confidently expected by Government that, should we again fall in with Titokowaru, no obstacle will be suffered to prevent the troops charging him.

To-day my camp equipage is being moved to Turo Turo Mokai, where the troops now are, and I expect Major Kemp to be there by to-night or to-morrow, and it is probable he will have inflicted some loss on Titokowaru, who cannot wholly escape.

From Turo Turo Mokai the pursuit may be carried on to Te Ngaire or Turangarere, but must ultimately take the direction of Waitara; and I intend, as soon as I can possibly decide he has gone thither, to send on a column to Waitara by land or sea, and to follow him myself through the bush, till I have done him all the injury in my power.

I have ordered Captain Hawes, with detachments from the garrisons behind, to look up the Waitotaras; and when they are punished, I hope I may be able to report these operations at an end.

The troops are immensely improved, and are daily becoming more and more valuable.

I have the pleasure to note your letter regarding the Ngatiporous, and shall leave orders for them either to join me at Taranaki (where they may be most useful if the enemy makes for Waitara), or to land here; and I beg that the "St. Kilda" may be ordered to come straight to Patea, without calling at Wanganui and waiting orders.

The Hon. the Defence Minister, Wellington.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 28.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Taiporohenui, 21st March, 1869.

In continuation of my last report, I have to inform you that on the 18th Major Kemp, after Whakamara had been taken, and his men had cooked, continued the pursuit of the enemy by his trail, and at sunset fell in with their rear. They attempted to lay an ambuscade for Kemp's advance, but were attacked so quickly and with so much determination that they could not hold their ground; but they sprang off so rapidly and dispersed so quickly, after delivering their fire, that only one could be killed, and (as we subsequently learned) one wounded badly in the skirmish. Kemp however pressed on, clambering up a precipice and forcing the enemy to abandon his already-prepared sleeping place, again fired on him, and inflicted some loss in this and other similar skirmishes during the following day. The sixty European Volunteers, from all Divisions of the Armed Constabulary except No. 1, followed the Natives, and kept up, notwithstanding their heavy marching order and want of experience, and at the first shot were always found to rush off to the front. This is a very

encouraging feature in the operations, and is doubtless a good omen for the future. Yesterday evening Major Kemp returned with his column, and speaks in high terms of the behaviour, not only of his own corps and Kupapas, but also of No. 8 Armed Constabulary, Arawas, and the Volunteers. He especially mentioned the Guides, who behaved very well, and, being Europeans, have once more proved that our countrymen, when trained, are able to undergo more fatigue than the Natives themselves in their own bush. I cannot say too much in praise of Major Kemp's conduct and exertions.

The main body of the Armed Constabulary marched back to Manawapou on the 19th, and being delayed by the tide could only reach Canada Redoubt that night. The next day they encamped at this place, where I have collected a store of provisions and ammunition.

Four of the men of Titokowaru have been killed, and three women taken, during this pursuit. Titokowaru is believed to be at Te Ngaire, but likely to go on soon to Taranaki.

I propose to follow him to Te Ngaire, and thence, if necessary, to Taranaki, taking proper steps meanwhile, as soon as I learn that he has actually started for Waitara, to send a force round to intercept him.

I despatched Lieut.-Colonel Gorton to-day to New Plymouth to enter into a contract for the supply of provisions in the Taranaki district, and I forwarded such information as I have obtained to Messrs. Parris (through Mr. Booth), Richmond, and the Officer Commanding. I have prepared the latter for the possible contingency of my requiring him to place a force to waylay the paths from this side; and I have told him to be prepared, if required, to obtain the assistance of such settlers as are acquainted with that bush and country.

I fear that I shall have trouble to catch all the fugitives, but I shall persevere. My Natives and Europeans have endeavoured to induce me to give some short time for rest, but if I can keep them to their work, I shall give none till convinced that nothing more can be effected by haste.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

The Hon. the Defence Minister, Wellington.

No. 29.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Head-Quarters, Camp Keteonatea,
26th March, 1869.

SIR,—

In continuation of my last report, I have the honor to inform you that on the 21st, finding the Natives exhausted, I could not move beyond Keteonatea, which is no very great distance from Taiporohenui, but more in the direction of my intended operations, and close to the bush. Here I directed four days' rations to be issued to the troops, and on the 22nd moved at 7 a.m. by the direct track to Tiro-tiro-moana, where I halted the Europeans, except the corps of Guides, and left them in bivouac with Lieut.-Colonel Lyon; I myself proceeded with the Wanganuis, No. 8 A.C., and the Guides, by the track believed to lead to Te Ngaire. No guide could be found to show us the way, but Major Kemp, with his usual intelligence, made it out correctly. After a few hours' marching by an excellent bush track, and over an almost level though wooded country, we came to the edge of the Ngaire swamp. Previously, at about two miles from Tiro-tiro-moana, we got traces of the enemy, and although, as he has done throughout his flight, he had caused his people to scatter, and avoid the track as much as possible, still we found a camp and a halting-place which induced us to believe him to be before us. It is unnecessary to describe Te Ngaire very particularly, my means of examining it having been limited; but the part I could see did not justify the accounts sent to me from many sources of its extraordinary difficulties of approach.

The swamp, perhaps in winter time a lake, is a rush morass with Toe-Toe growing along its edges. The distance across the part I saw is fifty-seven or sixty chains. The opposite bank to the place where I struck it was apparently formed by a promontory or island, of which the side nearest to me was cleared, and on which three large kaingas were clearly visible. I did not doubt that I had Titokowaru and his fugitive force before me, and nothing but the physical difficulty of passing the swamp to prevent my at once attacking him. However I wished to be prepared to overcome the difficulty, so I sent for the European force to assist me if labour was required. Lieut.-Colonel Lyon received his orders that evening, and marching at daylight reached my bivouac at 11 a.m. on the 23rd, and an escort of ammunition arrived later in the day.

During the night of the 22nd I caused the swamp to be reconnoitred by a few Natives, and ascertained that the surface was treacherous, and that in places near the southern bank, by the line the enemy apparently had taken, a very few of the men at a time could pass without danger. As I felt that in that case I could not justifiably attempt a surprise, unless the opposite shore could first be seized, I resolved to wait day and search for a more favourable spot. All the morning of the 23rd the edge of the swamp was examined, and at length I decided to send a party across from a spot some hundred yards from an eel-pa where the swamp was narrowest, to gain the bank and entrench themselves, while with ladders or hurdles I enabled the force to cross the swamp without sinking by the regular track.

The Armed Constabulary worked hard all day, and constructed a light sort of ladder with three long poles tied with supple-jack lashings, and about fifteen feet long by two feet wide. As soon as it grew dark Major Kemp sent a party of scouts to explore the swamp; but they were unable to hit off the line the Natives had used in coming to the eel-weirs. I was therefore compelled to abandon the enterprise for that day. Next day (the 24th) I determined to cross nearer the eel-weir, and gave up my intention of sending two parties; I therefore caused the Natives to clear a track in that direction, and sent back the Armed Constabulary to clear a road to my position for the pack-horses. In the evening I had all the ladders carried to the eel-weirs, which were about a mile from the main track to the eastward.

All this time the troops had been prohibited from lighting fires by day, and the utmost quiet was preserved. The enemy apparently took no precautions, and seemed ignorant of our proximity. We heard a man cry out "Now this evil man will cause the Wanganuis to come down upon us," a speech we attributed to one of Ahitana's people whom we knew to be at Ngaire, living peaceably, and who had refused to join Titokowaru. The "evil man" was believed to refer to the enemy, and this speech satisfied me that he was in one of the kaingas. Later we heard a woman cry out, "Haere mai, haere mai, o te toa, haere mai ki te kai" ("Come hither, come hither, ye brave, come hither to the food")—a speech which seemed to refer to fighting-men. Lastly we perceived that the Natives were carrying timber, evidently for a pa, and this seemed conclusive as regarded the presence and intention of the enemy.

At nightfall I passed fifty Wanganuis and Arawas under Sub-Inspector Gundry across the swamp at the eel-weirs, and had the whole of the Natives employed till 11 p.m. in carrying and placing the hurdle-ladders on the line. The Europeans then marched to the spot, and the Native force crossed without accident or noise. The Armed Constabulary brought more ladders across, and passed the swamp, the last arriving at 4 a.m. on the 25th. I now caused the force to be awakened, and leaving Lieut.-Colonel Lyon to hold the crossing in the entrenchments thrown up by the Natives, so as to secure our retreat in case of necessity, I advanced by the bush as silently as possible. It was growing daylight when we reached the kaingas, the Native force being disposed so as to surround it, which would infallibly have been done, but for a most unfortunate occurrence. The Maoris at the kaingas at length when we were close to them perceiving us, rose and many began to make off; others however ran towards us calling out "haere mai," and holding out a white flag, while those apparently escaping hesitated and seemed disposed to return. At this moment we discovered Kawana Paepae and Aperaniko among the Natives at the kainga, and I was embarrassed what to do, more especially as most of those escaping appeared to be women. I therefore myself ran down with Mr. Booth to the kainga, and was met by Ahitana's son, who protested that all the people were either his own or another neutral tribe from Oraukuku, a place I had never heard of before. I immediately asked him why he was preparing a pa, and he answered plausibly, that he feared as Titokowaru was broken, he might be in danger from his pursuers. He admitted also the speech about the "evil man," and said it referred to Titokowaru, who had been across the swamp three days before. Meanwhile the men sent to surround the place had halted, and the people had crept away by the edge of the swamp; but Tukarangi, (Ahitana's son) undertook to bring them back, and sent a man with one of mine for that purpose. As these continued absent, and Mr. Booth had discovered from a seemingly half-witted old man, that Titokowaru's people, or some of them, had been at the kainga, I despatched the Arawa to bring in the people who had left it. Unfortunately an hour had elapsed when the Arawa (on the return of the messengers without the people) started in pursuit, and as we have uniformly been unable with an hour between us to overtake the enemy or even come up with his women, and as he is travelling light, having lost all his food and baggage, the pursuit of the Arawa was fruitless. The trail lay towards Te Ngutu, and it was followed to the track of General Chute's march.

I cannot describe to you the vexation and disappointment of the force which, after overcoming the difficulties of disguising its presence, bridging and passing the Swamp unperceived, and effecting the surprise of the kainga, believed itself to have been duped out of its reward; but I trust the Government will consider that, even at the price of losing the opportunity, it was well not to have broken faith with Ahitana, on whose neutral or friendly disposition it is said that of the Taranakis depends, and who is closely related to the Wanganuis, who feel great sympathy for him.

I cross-examined Tukarangi, and learned from him that Titokowaru had determined to "die on his own land" at Te Ngutu, where he is at present. That ten of his men, whose names he gave, had been at his kainga when I arrived, but that he had been afraid to tell me so.

I felt the greatest inclination to disarm this young man and his followers, but refrained, because there seemed to be every likelihood of the rest of his people returning, and I ordered him to leave Te Ngaire (under pain of his neutrality being hereafter disregarded) and go to Keteonatea, where he has another kainga. I moreover insisted on his showing me the trail of Titokowaru across the swamp, which, however, he has to-day proved unable to do. I confess I greatly disbelieve all his statements, and feel sure that the women I saw were those of Titokowaru, whose rear guard at least, if not he himself, slept the previous night at Te Ngaire. If I am right, he has probably gone to Ngatimaru.

Nevertheless, I shall explore Te Ngutu, where I can see no fires at present, and if he is not there (and I can find no trail as yet leading in that direction), he must have gone to the Upper Waitara (Ngatimaru), a semi-friendly district, where I hardly like to march without distinct instructions as to the proper course to pursue in the event of such an occurrence as that of yesterday morning. Whatever happens, the Government may feel satisfied that Titokowaru's influence is wholly gone, and that he is hiding from the punishment of his crimes. To pursue him in this vast bush is a work of great difficulty, but, improved as are the European and Native troops, one from which I should not flinch for a moment, were I not doubtful whether such a course might not place fresh tribes in the field against us, which at present are not likely to be encouraged by his failure to espouse his cause.

I feel, however, that it is due to the troops to say that the bulk of the force is now fit to go anywhere or do anything that Europeans can be expected to do. They cannot track a fugitive Hauhau as fast as he can run away, especially in a wholly unknown country; but they have shown throughout these late operations that they are no longer at all intimidated by the bush, are quite able to make their way in it at a moderate pace, and that they can live in bivouac for weeks at a time without inconvenience, if required, in any weather.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain, Wellington.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 30.

Copy of a Letter from Mr. H. T. CLARKE to Mr. COOPER.

(No. 221.)

Civil Commissioner's Office,
Tauranga, 26th March, 1869.

SIR,—

I have the honor to report, for the information of the Government, that I returned to Tauranga on the morning of 11th instant, and at once resumed my duties.

The murder of Mr. Pitcairn by Te Kooti's order, and the general alarm felt in the district, induced the Hon. Dr. Pollen to visit the settlements along the Coast, and learn from personal observation the actual state of things.

Immediately on our arriving, we received intelligence that Te Kooti had attacked the friendly Natives at Whakatane, and had killed several of them, including two principal chiefs, Hori Tunui and Heremia Mokai. The pa was said to be besieged.

On the night of the 11th we steamed for Whakatane *via* Te Awa-o-te-Atua, and reached the latter place at daylight. I approached the shore in a boat as near as I could (the surf on the beach being too heavy to land), when I received intelligence that the Ngatipukeko were obliged to evacuate their pa, after a three days' siege; that the European settlements at the mouth of the Whakatane had been destroyed, and that a European force from Opotiki was there. I gave the Natives to understand that we had arms and ammunition on board, and requested them to proceed to Whakatane to receive them.

On reaching Whakatane we found the prominent points over the ruined settlement of Whakatane occupied by our men. I, at the request of Dr. Pollen, conferred with Major Mair, who was in command of about 150 men, composed of Europeans and Whakatohea and Ngaitai Natives. Major Mair had just returned from reconnoitring Te Kooti's position, and was obliged to retire before Te Kooti's superior forces.

I break off from this part of the narrative, and allow Major Mair (whose report is hereunto attached) to speak for himself.

I left Major Mair with the promise that supplies should be sent by the steamer "Tauranga" on the following day; but as it was found after the vessel left Whakatane that she had barely sufficient coals to take her back to Auckland, it was found to be impracticable. Dr. Pollen then arranged that, after landing me at Tauranga, the steamer should go to Auckland for the supplies and return forthwith.

On arriving at Tauranga we learned that very exaggerated statements had preceded us, to the effect that Te Kooti, after destroying the Whakatane settlements, had surprised the Arawa settlements at Te Matata, and was on his march to Maketu.

Te Pokiha, who with a force of his own men had charge of one of the redoubts at this place, left in hot haste with all his people to meet Te Kooti; and every available man of the European Militia had been called out. The place was in a state of great alarm.

On Monday, the 15th, the steamer returned from Auckland with supplies for Major Mair's forces. I left in her immediately for Whakatane, *via* Maketu, where I intended to land twenty smooth-bore muskets and three kegs ammunition. On arriving there (Maketu), I was astonished to find the place crowded with women and children. They begged me to consider their unprotected state—that their husbands and brothers had all gone in pursuit of Te Kooti. Under the circumstances, I felt that we were bound to afford protection; I therefore placed twenty men (*i.e.* Maoris of the Arawa Tribe) on pay, at the rate of 2s. per diem.

From Maketu we steamed to Whakatane. Major Mair was awaiting my arrival; he reported Te Kooti having retired up the Whakatane for a short distance, and then his having crossed the ranges to the Rangitaiki; it was supposed that his intention was to draw the Natives away from Paharakeke and attack Kokohinau (*vide* Major Mair's report).

I arranged with Major Mair if possible to leave the supplies at Te Awa-o-te-Atua; but on reaching Te Awa-o-te-Atua, it was found that the surf was so heavy, we only succeeded in landing one box of biscuits. I was therefore obliged to return at once to Tauranga, where I hoped to meet the "Clyde," a small river steamer, sent down by the Hon. Dr. Pollen.

At Tauranga I found the whole settlement in a state of consternation, from many causes. In the first place, Mr. Piercy, the clerk and interpreter to the Resident Magistrate's Court, Maketu, in the absence of Dr. Nesbitt, sent a letter, of which the enclosed is a copy. Then it was alleged that the Natives living and working for Europeans here had been suddenly warned to leave for their respective residences at once. Messengers were known to have come from different Hauhau settlements and held some sort of communication with their friends, and had returned.

I had not time to analyze the different statements so as to form an opinion as to the amount of reliance to be placed on them; but the Commanding Officer thought it advisable, and I concurred with him, to allow as many of the women and children to go to Auckland as were willing and able to go.

On Saturday, the 20th instant, Captain St. George arrived from Taupo, with the intelligence that it was very probable that Te Kooti would force his way across the country and retire into the Waikato country; that he met with a Native chief,* of the Ngatitahu, closely connected with the Uriwera, who was then on his way, he stated, to receive his rent from one of the runholders bordering the Uriwera. He was told that the person had left. He then made excuse that he was going to hunt pigs there. He was asked whether he had any one with him; he replied in the negative; but from something suspicious about the man Captain St. George was induced to get off his horse and look into a whare close by, where he saw at least ten men, most of them strangers. The whole of the district was in an excited state, and the Natives were calling out for arms, &c.; he also brought Native letters reporting the destruction of nine Ngatimanawa, (Arawas).

I deemed it a matter of great importance to frustrate, if possible, any attempt of Te Kooti to cross the Waikato, which I had little doubt he was endeavouring to do, as it exactly coincided with what we had heard from Patetere.

*Thaia, a short time since reported killed by the Hauhaus.

I therefore gave Captain St. George instructions to use his best endeavour to prevent by all means Te Kooti's passage into the Waikato, and render any other assistance to Major Mair in his power.

Captain St. George had only left a few hours when a special messenger arrived from Major Mair announcing Te Kooti's escape into Ahikereru. I immediately wrote a note to Captain St. George, telling him of what had occurred, and requested that all our arrangements might be held in abeyance.

On Tuesday evening (23rd) another special messenger arrived from Rotokakahi, with a letter from Rewi Tereanuku, supported by notes from Captain St. George and Dr. Nesbitt, stating that Te Kooti had returned in strong force to Motumako, and requiring immediate support. I was staggered at the conflicting nature of the accounts, especially as I was assured by Major Mair that Mr. Gilbert Mair, with the Ngatipikiao, was occupying Motumako at the very time the other party stated it was in the possession of Te Kooti.

After consultation with Colonel Harrington, I decided to start for Maketu and Matata overland, and see for myself the position of matters, and act as emergency required. On reaching Maketu, I met two gentlemen on their return from Major Mair's expedition. They informed me, as Major Mair had done, that Motumako was occupied by Ngatipikiao. I therefore immediately returned to Tauranga.

Copies of correspondence between myself and Captain St. George are herewith enclosed.

It is hard for me to explain the reason why the Arawa, especially that branch under Te Pokiha, at the last moment declined to respond to Major Mair's wishes. I am afraid that petty jealousies had much to do with it. But another fact ought to be stated which may have, in a great measure, caused the Ngatipikiao to pause. It appears that it was currently reported that a young chief, named Te Rupe, a man of great note belonging to the Ngatipikiao, was a prisoner in Te Kooti's hands. That they feared he would be shot down in an attack upon the pa.

I am aware that it is a matter of great difficulty to get the Arawa to act harmoniously together. And I am led to believe that had I been present to assist Major Mair, as I have done on several previous occasions, matters would have gone on more smoothly, and a different result arrived at. Unfortunately, it was physically impossible for me to be present.

The present position of Te Kooti's party at Ahikereru will be a matter for serious consideration of the Government. With his head-quarters at Ahikereru, Te Kooti could fall upon any of our settlements in the Bay of Plenty, choosing his own time; he is only a day and a half's march from Rotorua, or should he choose to cross over the Waikato he can do so in the same time. He can fall on Napier and Wairoa. The fact of his having such a large body of men mounted will enable him to move with rapidity and secrecy.

In my opinion no time should be lost in attacking Te Kooti, and destroying the Uriwera settlements in detail. The season is fast passing away; in a few weeks it will be impracticable.

I would beg of the Government to suspend their judgment with regard to the Arawa. There must be some cause for their conduct.

Should the Government decide upon making a combined movement to attack Te Kooti, I will pledge my word to raise such a force of Arawa as will give a satisfactory account of themselves. I very much regret that my physical state has rendered it impossible for me to accompany a force into the field, but I hope to be able to do so soon, should it be necessary.

Major Mair can raise such a force of Natives, composed of Ngaitai, Ngatipukeko, and Ngatiawa, as can be depended upon.

Major Mair has given orders for Rakuraku's pa, at Ohiwa, to be destroyed, and I proceed to Ohiwa to-morrow, in the "Clyde," to send the Arawa stationed at Ohiwa to remove all the crops in that neighbourhood.

I have, &c.,

H. T. CLARKE,

Civil Commissioner.

The Under Secretary, Native Department, Wellington.

Enclosure 1 in No. 30.

Copy of a Letter from Major MAIR to Mr. H. T. CLARKE.

SIR,—

Te Awa-o-te-Atua, 23rd March, 1869.

I have the honor to lay before you a detailed account of the late operations consequent upon the attack by Te Kooti on Whakatane.

On the 10th instant, at noon, I received information that the Ngatipukeko, at Rauporoa, had been attacked on the previous day at about 2 p.m. by Te Kooti, and during the afternoon I learned that the stores of Messrs. Simpkins and Milburn had been sacked and burnt. I immediately sent a messenger down the coast, to the eastward, for Natives, and, as soon as the tide permitted (8 p.m.), despatched Captain Mair with eighty men of the Armed Constabulary and Local Forces, for Whakatane. At 7 a.m. on the 11th instant, I followed with a like number of Natives of the Whakatohea and Ngaitai Tribes, and, upon reaching Whakatane at 2 p.m., found that the Ngatipukeko having expended all their ammunition and lost two of their leading chiefs, made a sort of treaty with Te Kooti, and evacuated their pa at about 8 a.m. that day, retiring towards Te Awa-o-te-Atua. The enemy were in pursuit, but, upon discovering the presence of a European force, they fell back and occupied a strong position called the Gate.

Hearing that reinforcements were coming up from Tauranga and Te Awa-o-te-Atua, I decided not to attack, as the enemy appeared to be not less than from 250 to 300 strong, and had the advantage of position. On the morning of the 12th instant, I sent twenty-five men up the Oringi River to look up the fugitives, and leaving a like number in camp, I moved out on the flat with the remainder to have a look at Te Kooti's force; they soon showed in great numbers at the Gate, and as we retired, they followed, marching in order, with cavalry on their flanks, to within 1,000 yards of our position, where they halted for a short time, and then ascending the heights, endeavoured to turn our left and get possession of the Opotiki Road; this, however, was prevented by the Ngaitai and Whakatohea, who

advanced in skirmishing order over the hills and kept them in check; heavy firing was kept up on both sides during the afternoon and the early part of the night; the enemy dropping their bullets among our men even at 1,000 yards range. During the day the s.s. "Tauranga" arrived, bringing arms and ammunition, but no men. Some Natives from Te Awa-o-te-Atua came up, and were armed. On the morning of the 13th a number of mounted men appeared on the flat driving off horses and cattle, but upon the cavalry turning out they retired. In the evening I found that Te Kooti, having burnt Rauporoa and some thirty or forty stacks of wheat, had withdrawn his entire force further up the valley. Mr. G. Mair brought some men from Te Awa-o-te-Atua, but many of them being unarmed, I was not in a position to follow the trail. On the 14th instant, with a small party of cavalry, I advanced about fifteen miles up the valley, and found that the enemy had taken the Raungache road over the ranges, between the Whakatane and Rangitaiki Rivers. On my return to camp I received a letter from Captain Simpson, informing me that he was at Te Awa-o-te-Atua with Ngatipikiao, and also one from Dr. Nesbitt to the effect that the Natives of Paharakeke had received intimation of Te Kooti's approach in their direction. I immediately sent Mr. G. Mair with fifty men to Kokohinau, Tuketu's pa, and wrote to Captain Simpson to move up to the same point. On the 15th I sent up the Europeans and the rest of the force, with the exception of a detachment of twenty men, to occupy Whakatane, remaining myself to await the steamer which arrived in the afternoon. After meeting and conferring with yourself, I followed and reached Kokohinau at 11 p.m., where I heard that Te Kooti had taken away all the Paharakeke people—Ngatimuku and Warahoe hapus, numbering about forty men, women, and children—and was supposed to be still in the neighbourhood, but whether at Matera on the ranges, or at Otipa on the river, no one could tell. Ngatipikiao and other parties having joined, and the force now numbering about 450 men, I determined upon following the enemy; and on the 16th, after ordering up the Whakatane detachment to occupy Kokohinau, marched by two roads converging upon Waiohau; here we forded the Rangitaiki River, which was very rapid and dangerous, and followed up the right bank on the evening of the 17th instant came upon a camping ground of Te Kooti's apparently not more than two days old. On the next day, the 18th, we reached Raorao, an out-station at Patuherchere, where the men, now nearly famished, managed to get some potatoes and peaches. At noon the force halted at Horomanga, where a further supply of potatoes was obtained, and at 3 p.m. the march was resumed along the Kuhawara Plain. Concealment on our part being impossible, I pushed on for Tauaroa, and when within two miles saw a body of about seventy mounted men galloping from the pa towards the Rangitaiki River. Under the impression that the Hauhaus had discovered us, and were retiring towards Taupo, I pushed forward with the cavalry, and, at sunset, reached a rising ground, about 500 yards from the pa, which I saw was full of men. A young fellow called Tikitu, who had been taken prisoner by Te Kooti at Otipa, came out to see who we were, and recognizing me, came forward. He told me that Te Kooti had not been aware of our approach, and that the mounted party had gone to Motumako to bring Ngatimanawa; he estimated the force in the pa at 100 fighting men, besides the Paharakeke and Patuherchere. I had sent a messenger to hurry up the force, and as they arrived, I ordered each party to occupy certain positions which would prevent the enemy from retiring in the night. By the time that prayers and spechmaking was over, it was quite dark, and then Fox refused to move. I urged that if the positions pointed out were not occupied, the enemy could escape in the dark; he admitted this, and said that it was very probable, but "none of his people knew the ground, and he would not move till daylight." Marsh's people, with Ngatiwhakawa posted by Mr. G. Mair, took up the position assigned to them, and effectually cut off retreat in that direction. Ngatipukeko could not be got nearer than 500 yards, but reduced this distance during the night. The Europeans, under Captain Mair and Sub-Inspector Travers of course took up the ground allotted to them, and prevented retreat on their side. The Whakatatohea and Ngaitai took up ground as well as their ignorance of the locality and the intense darkness would permit. Ngatirangitahi, who are familiar with the place, would not give any assistance whatever as guides, and I do not know where they got to during the night. About 9 p.m. the mounted men returned from Motumako, and some skirmishing ensued between them and the party under Marsh. My impression is, that it was during the confusion created thereby that Te Kooti effected his retreat from the pa; for shortly after midnight Ngatipikiao discovered that Tauaroa was empty. In one of the rifle-pits was found the still warm body of a Ngatirangitahi Native called Te Tohea, who had been made a prisoner the day previous; the hands were tied, and the face so mutilated by tomahawk wounds as to be scarcely recognizable. Long after daylight on the 19th, the rear guard of the enemy could be seen from the adjoining heights ascending a steep hill on the way to Ahikereru, and some horse-looters getting too near them were fired upon. The Arawa would not hear of a pursuit; in fact, both Europeans and Natives were quite worn out with the privations which they had been compelled to endure. During the day Peraniko, and a woman called Maria, came in and informed me that six or seven of the Ngatimanawa were prisoners, and that the rest were scattered; and that during the skirmish of the previous night they had been in the custody of the mounted party, who had released them about half-way to Ahikereru. They also said that Te Kooti's men were worn out with fatigue and very much in need of ammunition, and that Te Kooti intended to make Harema, near Ahikereru, his head-quarters, from which point he would make raids upon the Bay of Plenty settlements; and in the event of his getting together a large force, he would make an attack upon the Wairoa.

In the evening I assembled the Natives, and urged an advance on Ahikereru, and went so far as to promise an additional shilling per day, but all to no purpose, the feeling among the Arawa Chiefs being that to enter the Uriwera country the pay should be doubled, and that the Rangatiras should receive commissions; the lower class men would not agree to this, but said that the chiefs had no right to put them up for sale, and that all should be paid alike. No amount of argument on my part could produce any effect, for they answered that I was of course anxious for the success of the expedition, because in that case I would get all the credit.

On the 20th instant, we left Tauaroa; and Fox proposing that he should go to Motumako and lay a trap for Te Kooti, I did not object to his doing so, and sent Mr. G. Mair with him; the rest of the force reached Kokohinau, at noon on the 21st, and on the morning of the 22nd instant, the Opotiki

men, with the Whakatohea and Ngaitai, embarked on board the steamer "Clyde," at Te Awa-o-te-Atua for Opotiki.

On the 23rd instant, Mr. G. Mair returned from Motumako, and informed me that as nothing had been seen or heard of Te Kooti up to the afternoon of the 22nd, he had sent Ngatipikiao home by Parawai. Ngatimanawa had assembled again, and were to leave for Kai-Tiriria, on the 23rd instant.

The failure of this expedition may be attributed to the jealousy of some of the Arawa chiefs, coupled with their desire for higher pay.

The behaviour of the Europeans throughout was excellent; unprepared for a long expedition, they bore the hardship of heavy marches and no commissariat better than the lightfooted Maori, and deserve praise. The complicity of the Uriwera generally is now placed beyond doubt. Ngatipukeko state that they recognized Te Whenuanui, Paerau, Ihakara and other leading chiefs in the attack on Rauporoa, and also Timoti Te Kaka, Te Iki, and other chiefs of the Whakatohea. The first man killed in the attack on the mill was Te Wirihana, a well-known Taupo chief, he was shot by Jean Garraud, the miller, who killed another of the attacking party before he fell himself. The Hauhaus admit a loss of thirteen killed at Whakatane, but there is good reason to believe that they lost double that number. The unfortunate Ngatipukeko are heavy sufferers: their fine wheat crop, their highly-prized mill, their houses, tools, ploughs, and great numbers of their horses and cattle, are all gone; they were the most thrifty tribe in the district, and now are ruined. Messrs. Simpkins and Milburn have lost everything; they were warned by me at the same time as the late Mr. Pitcairn, but had no opportunity of removing their goods.

Te Kooti's object at present is to get men, and for that reason I think that his next visit will be to the Pahipoto and Patutatahi Tribes, on the Rangitaiki; with this in view I have left a small party of Arawa at Kokohinau, for the present to assist in the fortification of the pa, which is being reduced in size. In describing the losses of the Ngatipukiko I have omitted their list of killed, including the Frenchman, Jean Garraud; they lost eight men, two of whom, Hori Tunui and Heremia Tauteri, were leading chiefs, three women and two children, making a total of thirteen.

In conclusion, I must strongly urge that, to prevent further disaster, no time should be lost in following up Te Kooti, and at the same time punishing the Uriwera. As long as Te Kooti makes Ahikereru his head-quarters he is accessible; should he cross to the Waikato country, there would, I fear, be very little hope of ever catching him.

In the event of an expedition being organized, I would suggest that the Arawa should not again be permitted to take the field as a tribe with their Maori *mana*; the day of that system appears to me to have gone by; formed into companies and partially drilled they will do good service, but in any other fashion I for one would not care to lead them again.

To H. T. Clarke, Esq.,
Civil Commissioner, Tauranga.

I have, &c.,
W. G. MAIR, Major,
Commanding Expeditionary Forces.

Enclosure 2 in No. 30.

Copy of a Letter from Mr. PIERCY to Mr. H. T. CLARKE.

(Important.)

SIR,—

Maketu, 15th March, 1869. 1 p.m.

I have the honor to report that a Native woman has just arrived from Canaan, who states that a messenger, named Hunia, brother of Tamihana, belonging to Tapuika, arrived yesterday from Patetere, by way of Rotorua; that the purport of his coming was to acquaint the Natives that there was a general rising to take place in the Waikato, and it was their intention to attack Rotorua, Tauranga, and Hauraki; that Te Kooti's proceedings were the commencement of the rising, and not to discredit his report, as the blow had been already struck.

The Civil Commissioner, Tauranga.

I have, &c.,
JAS. JNO. PIERCY,
Clerk, Resident Magistrate's Court.

Enclosure 3 in No. 30.

INSTRUCTIONS to Captain ST. GEORGE.

(G. 279.)

Civil Commissioner's Office,

SIR,—

Tauranga, 21st March, 1869.

No. 34, March 12.
No. 38, March 17.

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your two communications to the Native Minister, of dates and numbers quoted in the margin, both of which I received late yesterday, reporting on the present position of affairs in the Taupo district, and the rumoured intention of Te Kooti to force his way into the Waikato. From information received from the Patetere District, from different sources, I have every reason to believe that the report is correct, and that he is acting in concert with a party in the Waikato district.

In my opinion it is a matter of the first importance to the Colony that Te Kooti should be prevented from passing over the Waikato with his followers, and that no effort should be spared to prevent his doing so.

You will be better able to judge of Te Kooti's intentions on your return to Taupo.

If you can render Major Mair (who is probably in the neighbourhood of Tauaroa) assistance in his efforts to destroy Te Kooti; or, if you have a reasonable hope of being able to prevent Te Kooti and his party from crossing into the Waikato district, you are authorized to engage the services of every available Native for either object; but you are distinctly to understand that the Government wish to avoid anything like a campaign.

The Tauranga Volunteer Cavalry, under Captain Moorsom, have been instructed by the Officer Commanding this District to proceed this evening to Rotorua: you will be good enough to furnish him from time to time with the most reliable information you can obtain as to Te Kooti's movements, and give him any other assistance which it is in your power to render.

Captain St. George, Tauranga.

I have, &c.,
HENRY T. CLARKE,
Civil Commissioner.

Enclosure 4 in No. 30.

Copy of a Letter from Mr. H. T. CLARKE to Captain St. GEORGE.

MY DEAR SIR,—

Tauranga, 22nd March, 1869. 12½ a.m.

We have just received tidings of Major Mair. Te Kooti has succeeded in making his escape into the Ahikereru district, consequently all the arrangements made by us will be held in abeyance.

Captain St. George, Taupo.

Yours, &c.,
H. T. CLARKE.

Enclosure 5 in No. 30.

Copy of a Letter from Captain St. GEORGE to Mr. H. T. CLARKE.

SIR,—

Kaiteriria, 23rd March, 1869. 11 a.m.

I arrived at Karere yesterday morning. Kemp and his men were there waiting for my arrival. Kemp tells me that Te Kooti is at Motumako; at any rate a part of his force are there, and the remainder no further than Tamarau. On my arrival at Karere, I sent Kemp and his party on to Rerewhakaritu, and also sent Rewi and his people there (some of Rewi's were already there). There are now at Rerewhakaritu 135 men. I wrote to Poihipi and Hohepa to meet me at Teupokoopo (near Rerewhakaritu) with as many armed men as they could muster. This was all done before hearing of the return of cavalry to Tauranga. I told Kemp yesterday that Major Mair had sent word that Te Kooti had retired to Ahikereru. Kemp says that he did so, but has again returned to Motumako, some of Rewi's scouts being chased by Te Kooti's people there. I believe that Te Kooti will try to pass to Waikato, probably by Waitapu or Paerou. I have written to Taupo to have all canoes taken out of the way, which will delay him if he tries above the Niho-o-te-kiore. Pending further orders, I shall try and prevent him.

I rode to Mouria last night to meet you, and there heard that you had returned with the cavalry. Your letter (22nd date), by Maunsell, I have only this moment received, so that all my instructions to the Natives were given previously. I have just returned from Mouria, and find all my orders carried out. I start now to join Kemp and Rewi at Rerewhakaritu. I hope that you will think I shall do right in not dismissing these men under the above circumstances. On my arrival at Rerewhakaritu I shall go myself and find out Te Kooti's actual whereabouts.

The Taupo Natives sent down word that Te Kooti has said that "Tauranga (on Taupo Lake) will be his resting place." My opinion is that he won't stop there.

H. T. Clarke, Esq., Civil Commissioner.

I have, &c.,
JNO. C. ST. GEORGE.

P.S.—I send this by Mr. Hallett, to whom I have promised pay. No Natives to be got here to carry letters.

Enclosure 6 in No. 30.

Copy of a Letter from Mr. H. T. CLARKE to Captain St. GEORGE.

(G. 284.)

Civil Commissioner's Office,
Tauranga, 25th March, 1869.

SIR,— I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your communication of the 23rd instant, acquainting me with your intended proceedings.

The whole story of Te Kooti's having returned to Motumako is simply untrue. Mr. Gilbert Mair, with the Ngatipikiao and Ngatirangi Tribe, occupied Motumako from Saturday morning, 20th instant, till Monday afternoon, 22nd instant, and not a sign of Te Kooti's party was seen either there or at Tauaroa.

I regret that after being aware of the contents of Major Mair's communication conveying the intelligence of Te Kooti having returned to Ahikereru, that any steps should have been taken which will involve the Government in a heavy outlay without a hope of accomplishing anything.

Should Te Kooti really attempt to force a passage across the Waikato, every means should be used to prevent him.

I have, &c.,
H. T. CLARKE,
Civil Commissioner.

To Captain St. George.

No. 31.

Copy of a Letter from Major NOAKE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

(No. 148.)

SIR,— Militia Office, Wanganui, 31st March, 1869.

I have the honor to report, for your information, that Captain Bryce, in scouring the district behind Pakaraka for rebel Maoris, found, some distance in the bush, a Native man, woman, and child, whom he made prisoners. The man is known by the name of Te Karera, of Pakaraka, Waitotara, and

to be of bad character. He states that he has been living at Pakaraka all along. There appears little doubt but that he has been with the enemy, or he would have been with the others of his tribe who remained neutral in Wanganui. I have kept them prisoners till I hear your wish concerning them. The woman and child I have given into the care of Mete Kingi. The man, after showing him that he had a narrow escape of being shot, I told I would spare his life provided he proved useful to me in getting at the Waitotara rebels, reported to be up the river. I have sent him out to Weraroa to start with an expedition I have organized for to-morrow, with the understanding that if he attempts to escape he will be shot.

I have warned the Natives at Putiki, and sent up the Wanganui River a notice to all, that any Native now found in the Waitotara District runs the risk of being shot, and that all well-disposed must keep away, or they will be treated as rebels.

I leave to-morrow morning, with all my force, to endeavour to find those people where they are reported to be—up the River Waitotara. I take four days' provisions, though I may be away for a longer period, as I expect to find Maori supplies on my way. The country is reported to be very difficult of access. I have two canoes, one large and one small one, and hope to capture more: at any rate these will be useful.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain,
Defence Minister.

I have, &c.,

M. NOAKE, Major,
Commanding Wanganui Militia District.

No. 32.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Taranaki, 8th April, 1869.

I have the honor to report that, on the 3rd instant, a column under Major Kemp explored the neighbourhood of Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu, and returned without obtaining any traces of the enemy. On the next day I examined two of Titokowaru's women who had voluntarily come in, and from their information taken separately, and from that of other Natives of Ahitana's tribe, on whom it appeared that some reliance might be placed, I learned many particulars of Titokowaru's flight, and that he had proceeded to the Upper Waitara. When the force surprised Te Ngaire, it now appears that at least seventy of Titokowaru's people (Araukuku, Ngatimaru, and Tangahoe fugitives) with all his women, except those who could keep up with the advance, were at the Kainga, and subsequently made off to follow his line of retreat, though, to a slightly different part of the Ngatimaru country.

Under these circumstances, I decided to leave a sufficient force to prevent any scattered parties creeping back into the district, and to proceed as quickly as I could to Taranaki with the remainder of the force.

The Wanganui Natives have returned to their homes, having, at my request, in going to Te Ngaire, already gone as a proof of good will beyond what is esteemed their district, and being anxious not to follow the force any further towards Taranaki.

I have left the Ngatiporou with clear orders, and I think their well-known bush training will enable them to follow up any straggling parties, and to prevent any general return of any of the tribes lately in arms.

With the rest of the force in two columns, I have moved to this place, and expect that all will be assembled at Waitara by the 10th instant.

I shall further communicate with you on the arrival of the detachment which moved round by the back of Mount Egmont, when I shall know whether any trace of the enemy was found at Araukuku.

The Hon. the Defence Minister.

I have, &c.,

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 33.

Copy of a Letter from Lieut.-Colonel ST. JOHN to Colonel WHITMORE.

SIR,—

Mataitawa, 9th April, 1869.

I have the honor to report that, owing to No. 4 not joining me in time, I was obliged on the 5th to camp at Pakake, at the entrance of the bush. At daybreak on the 6th I entered the bush with the force as per margin,* and by dusk reached the Patea River, on the banks of which I camped. I regret to state that on the march Lieut.-Colonel Fraser was struck down by an epileptic fit. I sent him to the rear on a stretcher with 20 men under Mr. Withers, and with Acting Assistant-Surgeon Leslie to attend him. The next day I started again at daybreak, and halted for dinner on the Mongonui (a branch of the Waitara). After passing through a bad bit of swampy ground, the scouts came upon a dead Maori, who had apparently perished from inanition. He had on his back a nearly healed bullet wound, and had been dead about three days. This day I halted earlier than usual, as the guide told me we had only six miles more to go and that there was no more water on the road. On the 8th I started as usual, and found the six miles lengthened out considerably, as I did not reach this post till 4.30 p.m.

The track throughout is well defined, and is carried over the easiest bit of bush country I have ever travelled, it being a level plateau all the way till within about eight miles of this. The obstacles to our progress were the undergrowth of timber and supplejacks, the fallen trees and the numerous creeks, streams, and swampy gullies intersecting the plateau. We counted fifty-one of the first and twenty-four of the second; the last were so numerous that I lost all count of them. In crossing them we were much aided by the remains of General Chute's corduroy roads. Most of the streams ran from west to east, and were very cold. Some eight miles from this we ascended a tolerably high hill,

* Armed Constabulary: Inspectors, 2; Sub-Inspectors, 4; Acting Sub-Inspectors, 3; Sergeants, 17; Constables, 275; Scouts, 12. Total, 313.

from the summit of which a broad well-beaten track led along a ridge right around a natural amphitheatre, taking first an easterly direction, and then working round by the north to the westward. We debouched about 2.30 p.m. on a small clearing, where we had a meal of potatoes, and then came through cultivations and a small bush to this place. The whole distance from the entry of the bush to the exit I estimate at forty-five or forty-six miles. The timber throughout is very poor, though I occasionally saw some very fine specimens of Remu, Matai, and Kahikatea. I have halted the column at this post waiting orders.

Colonel Whitmore, Commanding Field Force.

I have, &c.,

J. H. H. ST. JOHN,
Lieut.-Colonel.

P.S.—I have omitted to add that throughout the column marched very well; and with a few exceptions of footsoreness from bad boots, &c., the men are all fit for duty.

J. H. H. ST. JOHN,
Lieut.-Colonel.

No. 34.

Copy of a Letter from Major NOAKE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

(No. 160.)

SIR,—

Militia Office, Wanganui, 11th April, 1869.

I have the honor to report, for your information, that having heard that the Waitotara Natives of Titokowaru's force were at a settlement up the Waitotara River, I determined to force my way up the river, if possible discover their position, and surprise them in their fancied security. Previous to my departure I had caused a written notice to be circulated amongst the River Wanganui Natives, warning them that any Native found in the Waitotara District was liable to be treated as a rebel. With the above object in view, on the morning of the 1st of April I assembled my force at Perekama, strength as per margin,* taking four days' provisions, the men carrying fifty rounds of ammunition, two days' rations, and their blankets: a canoe took the other two days' rations. We arrived at Te Auroa and encamped about dusk, after a heavy march, a great portion of the way having to be cut through the bush and up and down hill. This settlement is on both banks of the river, with considerable cultivations.

APRIL 2ND.—Marched at daylight, the country becoming more and more difficult as we progressed: precipitous ridges, steep and slippery banks, and dense bush bound together with supple-jack. In the afternoon we arrived at Pokai, a small settlement with cultivations. Rain coming on, I encamped here, finding, as at Auroa, a commissariat supplied by the enemy, also an addition to the transport in the form of a canoe.

APRIL 3RD.—Passed a very wet night, which rendered further progress on foot next to an impossibility. A wet morning, the river rising fast, I despaired of making further progress. As it was necessary to divide my force for supplies, and, moreover, to ensure my retreat, I sent back Captain Hawes to Te Auroa to reconnoitre that position well, survey tracks leading from it, destroy the eel-weir, and launch a large canoe reported to have been seen by the canoe party in a creek on the way. I then sent Captain Kells, with twenty-four of his men and the guide, in two canoes, to reconnoitre up the river, if possible find more canoes, and should he find a suitable place to encamp to do so, and send back the canoes. He not only found a settlement with large cultivations (Pa Rakau), but two more canoes, which he sent down to me with those he took up. In the meantime I sent to Captain Hawes to send up the large canoe, if launched, as the river had risen so much that it would easily come up.

APRIL 4TH.—Sent on Captain Bryce, Captain Gilling (being in possession of the large canoe from Captain Hawes), and all the force except Lieutenant Hunter and thirty men, left to hold the position.

APRIL 5TH.—Having now transport for sixty odd men (with the river still rising), I determined to push on with the picked men of the force, although the weather was bad to a degree, being extremely cold, wet, and stormy. I desired that all the officers should have a knowledge of the country: I therefore had the commanding officer of each corps, with his best men, to come with me as far as we could, with the exception of Captain Hawes. That officer I left at Te Auroa, believing it to be the most important position and the key to the river, most of the inland tracks leading to it. I left Lieutenant Garrett (Kai Iwi Cavalry), with thirty men, to hold Pa Rakau, which place I left at daylight, the weather being most inclement; yet this circumstance, I believe, was most fortunate, as the men, being wet and cold, worked the harder to keep themselves warm. Considering that we had to improvise paddles for our canoes, use poles, and but few who understood either, the force made an extraordinary progress. We had but a few minutes' rest to eat, when we found ourselves at Te Erangi. Being a settlement of some considerable importance, we expected to meet with some of those we were seeking. We approached the place with every precaution, but found everything but the men themselves—large cultivations, stores of wheat, Indian corn, cattle, sheep, poultry, honey, and property of every description. The place had evidently been recently occupied. We arrived at this place about 2 p.m.

The guide informed me that the place of all on the river, and that where we expected to find the enemy, if he was on the river at all (Piraunui), was not far distant. Although the men had already had a hard day's work, I determined to push on, and, if possible, pounce upon them before they could know we were in the neighbourhood. On nearing Piraunui we saw very recent tracks on the bank, and heard cries in the land, as though some man was giving the alarm, and we congratulated ourselves that at last we had run them to earth. Disembarked before arriving at the usual landing-place divided my little force, so as to surround, as much as possible, the place; advanced with the utmost precaution, when, expecting every moment to receive a volley, we arrived at the pa palisades, found a small white flag flying, and a decrepid old woman left to receive us—the same venerable personage recognized by some of the party as the old lady left at Okotuku, or some other place, to receive

* Kai Iwi Cavalry:—2 officers, 1 sergeant, 14 rank and file. Veterans:—2 officers, 2 sergeants, 61 rank and file. Wairoa Rifles:—3 officers, 2 sergeants, 32 rank and file. Patca Rifles:—2 officers, 2 sergeants, 36 rank and file. Total:—9 officers, 7 sergeants, 143 rank and file.

General Chute, under somewhat similar circumstances. After scouring the immediate neighbourhood, I sent Captain Kells with a party to reconnoitre some little distance. About a mile or so away he came upon another kainga, one of the prettiest and most comfortable he had seen: this he destroyed, also another still further up. We remained at Piraunui the night.

APRIL 6TH.—Sent Captain Bryce, with ten of his men, who are mostly good canoe-men, up to explore the river a few miles. He left at daylight and returned about eleven, reporting that about two miles and a half he came upon the boulder rapids. The river being flooded enabled them, by dint of great labour, to get through them, though at times the stream fairly drove them back. They perceived footprints on the bank, of recent date; this was an incentive to push on. Their perseverance was rewarded. On turning a bend they came upon a canoe with three Maoris, who bolted, leaving the canoe in the hands of Captain Bryce's party, who thereupon returned to camp, having, as they calculated, been about ten miles above Piraunui, and sixty miles from the mouth of the river. As Captain Bryce reported it impossible to get our fleet of canoes up the rapids, I determined to return, deeming it would be most imprudent to advance further, as I was short of ammunition,—what with wet weather, accidents—such as men tumbling overboard, canoes getting swamped—left me considerably short of the quantity I started with, which was little enough to meet an enemy in such a country. Piraunui is the key to the Wanganui tracks, Pipiriki, Ranana, and Hihuharama. I knew that the Natives were alarmed and aware of our being in their fastnesses, and thought it not improbable that the Pipiriki Tribe might join their relations, and expel the intruders from their midst, therefore I did not consider myself justified in proceeding. I should have had to abandon my canoes, supports, and line of retreat, and, if opposed, to fight my way to the Wanganui River. Everything destroyed—settlement, cultivations, eel-weirs, and any stock we could not eat; the same at Te Erangi. Encamped at Wharekowhiti.

APRIL 7TH.—Destroyed this place and cultivations along the river. Arrived at Purakao; relieved Lieutenant Garrett, and sent him and party to relieve Lieutenant Hunter, who marched overland to Te Auroa, under Captain Gilling.

APRIL 8TH.—Captain Bryce, with eight of his men and guide, struck into the Pakaraka track near Puke Wharariki, and arrived at Numaru the same evening; found the track a tolerably easy one. Captain Kells relieved Lieutenant Garrett's detachment, and Lieutenant Garrett marched to Te Auroa. Captain Gilling took up a position at Tekua Pounamu, where they found more cultivations.

APRIL 9TH.—Sixty men, with the loot horses, under Lieutenant Kenah, left for Weraroa by a track from the right bank of the river; Captain Hawes with canoes and loot; whilst Captain Kells and self joined Captain Gilling's party at Tekua Pounamu, and encamped.

APRIL 10TH.—Myself, with the remainder of the force left at Tekua Pounamu, left for Weraroa, and arrived at about eleven, when the sale of loot commenced immediately. The corps marched then to their respective camps.

I cannot conclude this, my diary report, without bringing to your notice the excellent conduct of the force.

The success of the expedition was due entirely to the active assistance and co-operation I received from the officers, with the untiring energy, perseverance, and ready obedience and subordination of the men, which reflected the greatest credit upon themselves and their officers.

After passing Te Auroa, the river runs amongst high hills, which come to the edge either in cliffs or points at the bends. It winds with great regularity, and presents the same features all the way up to the boulders, when the country changes. It is a river easily defended by a small force, subject to sudden rises and falls, and full of snags; better at the upper part than the lower.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. Colonel Haultain,
Defence Minister.

M. NOAKE, Major,
Commanding Wanganui Militia District.

No. 35.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Head-Quarters, Te Awa-o-te-Atua, 23rd April, 1869.

I have the honor to inform you that on the 5th April I marched in two columns from Waihi, the right column, carrying four days' rations, taking the line of General Chute's march to the eastward of Mount Egmont, under command of Lieut.-Colonel St. John; and the left, with the drays conveying the tents and materials (which could not be shipped at Patea, owing to the alteration in the bar), by the mouth of the Waingongoro, under Inspector Roberts. I accompanied this latter column, having satisfied myself that Lieut.-Colonel St. John was not likely to meet with any opposition. The difficulties of the coast road were considerable, but the troops worked heartily under the constant supervision of Inspector Roberts, and by the morning of the 8th the last dray was brought safely to Opuaki. The difficulties of the road may be inferred from the fact, that at some places seven, and at many five horses had to be harnessed to the drays to get them along, and as Mr. Quinlivan's teams are probably as good as any in the Colony, it will be readily understood that the obstacles were not trifling. And here I think it right to say, that Mr. Quinlivan, the contractor for transport, has conducted his duties throughout the campaign in a most satisfactory and creditable manner. At Opuaki the steamers "Sturt" and "St. Kilda" met the troops and embarked the column and baggage, proceeding direct to Waitara, the drays returning to Patea with a Native escort. I myself left on the 7th, and reached New Plymouth overland early next day, and met the Hon. Mr. Richmond. The column under Lieut.-Colonel St. John arrived on the evening of the 8th at Mataitawa, having found no enemy to oppose it, but having come upon the trail of three exhausted stragglers of Titokowaru's force, who had been apparently unable to kindle a fire, or to make more than a mile or two's march daily. One of these was at length discovered dead by the wayside, and the guides were of opinion that the others had only

drawn aside to die. The man found dead belonged to the Waitotara Tribe, and was fearfully emaciated. The mark of a scarcely healed wound was observed on his body.

On the 9th I proceeded to Waitara with the Hon. Mr. Richmond, and Messrs. Parris and Richmond (the Superintendent of the Province). With these gentlemen I embarked on board the "St. Kilda," and steamed along the coast to Mokau. I had massed my field force at the Waitara. Major Brown had collected his at Urenui, with the object of at once attacking an invading party believed to have entered the district. But a close reconnaissance of the coast, and an advance by land, proved that the enemy, if he had been to the south of Mokau, had retired again to that place. At Mokau there were apparently some few Natives, but the character of the place rendered it impossible to estimate their number; and though I remained some time there in the "St. Kilda," and fired a few shots from a 24-pounder Howitzer, I could not discover any signs of a force near the mouth of the river. I returned the same evening and found Lieut.-Colonel St. John with the right column in camp. This officer had marched in three days what General Chute had taken nine to traverse, thus proving how the clearing a track, even after a lapse of some years, increases the facility of getting about the country. Much of the labour expended by General Chute is still of value to the traveller. The swamps are in some places passable still by his fern-tree bridges, and the track is still too broad to be mistaken. Nevertheless our troops had evinced considerable activity on their march, and it is worthy of note that they were almost unaccompanied by Natives. The Native guide, Horopapera, and some eight or ten Arawas were the only Maoris with the column, and as no European troops have as yet penetrated the forest so deeply without a considerable body of Natives to discover ambushes and generally facilitate the march, I draw your attention to the circumstance.

After carefully considering the subject, and permitting me to offer my military opinion on the matter, Mr. Richmond decided, for reasons with which you are doubtless acquainted, that the troops should be employed in penetrating the interior from the Bay of Plenty, and not in advancing from the mouth of the Mokau River. Under these circumstances I have taken care to provide the Province of Taranaki with a strong force from my moveable column of 160 Constabulary, under the command of an experienced and trustworthy officer; in addition to this force and its own Militia, there are in the Province some sixty or seventy of their celebrated Bushrangers on pay, and a body of Volunteers from the Thames, about fifty strong, besides some mounted men. These troops I directed to be chiefly assembled at the White Cliffs, and with the assistance of the friendly Natives they appear to me to be sufficient to confront any enemy at all likely to invade the district. Of course, in case of need, the Militia would be available.

Titokowaru has retired upon the Waitara River in the Ngatimaru country. I earnestly hope that the hardships his followers have undergone may tend to keep him quiet until he can be completely disposed of. To secure the Patea district against any further molestation from his main body, and to prevent any concentration of his stragglers, I left the local Volunteers of the Wairoa, Patea, and Carlyle Rifles, together with the Ngatiporou Constabulary, and No. 3 Division (the portion not at Poverty Bay of that division) to scour the country. When I left the district I had organized a local column of the Kai Iwi Cavalry, Veteran Volunteers, Wairoa and Patea Rifles, to follow up the retreat of the Waitotara Natives, whom I knew to be dejected and dispirited at the dispersion of their friends with Titokowaru. Following up the successes of the Colonial troops before there had been time for the effect of Titokowaru's reverses to wear off, Major Noake has penetrated, as you have doubtless learned, a district never before known to Europeans, and has done most valuable service. Not only has his march done much towards making the enemy feel that this time at least they have been utterly discomfited, but he has acquired a knowledge of their most remote fastnesses which will deprive any further disturbances in that part of the country of the greatest part of the difficulty of suppressing them. He has moreover acquired, by his own enterprise, and that of his gallant coadjutors and followers, a knowledge of the paths and tracks for those settlers who are most likely to be at hand on any future occasion when that knowledge is required; and, lastly, he has deprived the enemy of his entire flotilla of canoes, and much plunder which was doubtless believed to be in security.

On the 10th instant, the steamer "Lyttleton" arrived at Waitara, bringing up the Artillery from Patea, having through her less length been enabled to enter the river safely where it would have been dangerous to employ the "Sturt." In the evening Mr. Richmond left in the steamer "St. Kilda" with No. 8 Armed Constabulary, and the detachment of No. 4 Armed Constabulary, for Manukau.

On the 11th, I followed with No. 6 Armed Constabulary, and by the evening of the following day these troops were on their way to the Bay of Plenty in the "Lord Ashley." I regret to state that some of the men who had long unspent arrears of pay in their possession, and had just come from a fatiguing march of two months in the bush, allowed themselves to fall into the temptation afforded by so many public houses; so that fifty men from this cause, or in endeavouring to bring away their comrades, were left behind. They have however made good their passages at their own expense. I cannot but hope that the Government will not be disheartened at this circumstance, for some allowance is due to men who had worn their clothes to rags in the hard service they have undergone, and who had not for months seen any fare but their bare ration, or a town of any description.

I remained myself in Auckland on the 13th and till the evening of the 14th, during which time I made the necessary preparations for the march now before me into the interior, through an almost unknown and desert country. On the 14th I was invited to a dinner given to me by many of the leading citizens of Auckland, and, with the consent of the Resident Minister, I accepted the invitation. This dinner was expressly intended to have no political significance, and I therefore felt justified in asking to be allowed to accept the compliment to my troops and myself. On the 15th I reached Tauranga, and found it impossible to obtain transport next day. On the 17th, being disappointed in the arrival of drays, I marched without them, leaving a rear guard to load the "Clyde," which had been sent to assist the operations, and a Native cutter with my stores. That night I reached Maketu. The troops were so exhausted by the march across the beach that I could only push a short distance on next day, having no means of providing for the footsore men. It was the 19th, therefore, before I reached Matata, where I met the "Clyde." Unfortunately, the Native cutter grounded on the bar, and all its cargo, consisting of biscuit and ammunition,

was damaged. I communicated this to you as soon as I was able. I now sent back to Tauranga orders to Captain Moorsom and his Cavalry to march by the Lakes to the upper part of the Kaingaroa, to meet Sub-Inspector Richardson, the Opotiki Cavalry, and the Taupo Natives, and to hold the main road to prevent any attempt on the part of Te Kooti to cross to Taupo. I have since learned that Sub-Inspector Richardson and his troopers have been diverted to assist in the Mohaka expedition, but I think Captain Moorsom should be strong enough till I reach the plains.

The rear guard came up on the 20th, after dark, and I occupied that day and the next in vainly trying to find a channel up the Rangitaiki for the "Clyde." This river has been popularly believed to be navigable for steamers of three or four feet, at all events for many miles, but proved, after careful survey, to be impracticable. After a flood, possibly a steamer might be got past the obstacle, which is a reach of mud flat about a mile in extent, and after that it is all deep water for fifteen miles; but for the "Clyde," or any steamer drawing more than eighteen inches, it is not navigable in its normal condition. The harbour too is dangerous, but the line is so much nearer, and possesses so many other advantages, that in spite of these difficulties I have resolved on adopting it. It was with pain that Mr. Richmond and I learned, by the arrival of the "St. Kilda" with your telegram, sent on by Lieut.-Colonel Gorton, that the movement of troops had not been early enough, by threatening Te Kooti in the Uriwera country, to prevent his making another foray on the Coast. The tragical occurrences at Mohaka—a spot so safe from harm, to all appearance, that even the Maoris of the place had not considered it in enough danger to leave a sufficient guard for their kainga, while absent on an expedition themselves—show how necessary it is to undertake, however late in the year, the attack upon the Uriwera fastnesses, from which troops had always hitherto recoiled, and which has afforded Te Kooti a refuge hitherto. The difficulties of such a campaign are chiefly those due to long land carriage, and to the unknown character of the country. It is known to have stopped the Ngapuhi long ago, and it has hitherto been impossible to bring troops to its outskirts. What fortifications may exist in it is unknown, and a very great part of it can only be supplied by provisions carried on men's backs. There is no sound land for some distance from the coast—and if there was, there are no drays obtainable. Mr. Richmond has decided that this enterprise should be at once attempted by the troops, now diminished in number through the necessary discharge of some of the Arawa Constables and the diversion of the Cavalry, under Sub-Inspector Richardson. The Arawa and Ngatipukeko Tribes have therefore been invited to take a part by the two main arterial roads, and Mr. Richmond left on the 21st to organize a third column to penetrate by Waikare Moana. Each column will be liable to attack by Te Kooti's band and the whole Uriwera Tribe. No supplies can be depended upon from the country; indeed even meat cannot be procured here, but under existing arrangements I think it probable that all three columns will be able to meet or communicate about the beginning of next month. The line of supply must be by the Rangitaiki River, which must be ascended by canoes with stores to Otipa, and thence provisions must be packed for twenty-five miles to a spot in the Kaingaroa Plains. From that point the prevalent opinion is that pack-transport can be employed through four miles of bush to Ahikereru, which is twelve or fifteen miles further on, and is the gateway to the Uriwera country from the Taupo Plains. This point is expected to be disputed, but the main stand, it is anticipated, will be at Ruatahuna. The column which enters by this side I purpose accompanying myself. A second column will advance by the Whakatane Gorge, under Lieut.-Colonels St. John and Fraser, who have both been some distance by that route, and should arrive at Ruatahuna in good time to co-operate. The Wairoa Column will possibly not be able to cross the lake, but in that case will go to Maungapowhatu by the land track; and if successful in carrying any works at Ruatahuna, it is possible that I may be able, with part of my force, to reach that point also. But I beg the Government not to calculate on a complete success from these operations. Nobody better than I can appreciate the difficulty before me, having last year spent eighteen days in hard marching on the mere outskirts of this district. The country is already doubtless under snow. The hills are so steep, that five miles as the bird flies is a long day's march. The enemy is sure to ambuscade and delay our march. Our convoys of provisions may, and very probably will, be attacked in coming to us from the rear; and our force being largely composed of Native allies, to whom cold is hateful, and on whom it exercises an effect which they cannot shake off, may disperse like melting snow at any moment, even on the eve of completing all the objects of the expedition. All that can be done, with a full foreknowledge of these rocks which may shatter our enterprise, the Government may depend upon our doing; but this undertaking is so different from any other as yet attempted, and so much more liable to miscarriage, that I deem it a duty not to be sanguine myself, or to lead the Government to expect too much. As yet, sufficient supplies are not even landed to move, but an advanced position has been taken up on both lines from this side, and a considerable quantity of stores have been sent on.

If the weather permits landing within the next day or two, I hope the question of supplies being landed will not aggravate our difficulties, for the steamer is in the bay with stores on board.

Whether the troops will return by the routes they take in advancing, or whether they have to push through to Wairoa for supplies, will depend on circumstances I cannot foresee, but in either case the Government may depend on the most regular communication I can maintain.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. the Defence Minister.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

No. 36.

Copy of a Letter from Lieut.-Colonel LYON to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Patea, 26th April, 1869.

I have the honor herewith to forward Captain Hawes' report of his expedition up the Whenuakura River.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. Colonel Haultain, Wellington.

WILLIAM C. LYON, Lieut.-Colonel,
Commanding Patea District.

Enclosure in No. 36.

Copy of a Letter from Captain HAWES to Lieut.-Colonel LYON.

SIR,—

Wairoa, 24th April, 1869.

I have the honor to report that, in accordance with your instructions, I started at 7 a.m. on the 20th instant from this post, with a party of thirty-four of the Wairoa Rifle Volunteers, and marched to the bank of the Whenuakura River, below Putahi, where I was met by No. 9 Division Armed Constabulary (Ngatiporou), under Captain Ferris, and the Patea Rifles, under Captain Gelling, together numbering ninety of all ranks. The two canoes brought up by Mr. Booth were much delayed by the unexpected bends and stoppages in the river between the mouth and Putahi. We remained, as the men were wet, at the old camp of Titokowaru's, on the slope beyond Putahi, having found foot-tracks a few days old of two or three Natives, about the clearings at that place.

We started early on the morning of the 21st, sending some men down to bring up the canoes. At the eel-weir above, both foot-tracks and the remains of a fire were seen, the latter still smouldering.

We continued up the left side of the river, but generally at a considerable distance from the bank, along which we could not travel, and came in the afternoon to a small kainga in a hollow, half a mile from the river, from which place we followed an old track over a high ridge overlooking the river for a great distance. We saw from this point what we supposed to be smoke, at a distance of two or three miles up the river; and as it was then too late to advance, we returned to the kainga that we had just left and encamped for the night. No Natives had apparently lived at or used this place for the last two years. I had been obliged to leave the canoes behind, not far above Putahi, as they could only be brought on at a very slow rate indeed, on account of the long bends and great number of snags in the river.

On the morning of the 22nd we started at daybreak, and, after leaving our swags at an old eel-weir, proceeded very cautiously up the river, over very rough broken country, densely covered with timber, scrub, and supplejack. Our progress here was very slow as we had scouts (Ngatiporou) out in advance constantly—without success, however, as they could find neither tracks nor signs of any Natives having been in the vicinity, nor were there any cultivations or even flats to be seen from the ridges and tree tops, the broken ranges coming close to the river everywhere. After searching for the place where the supposed smoke was seen, without success, we returned in the evening to our last camp, as the rations were getting short, and there was no probability of our finding anything in the shape of supplies.

On the 23rd we started at 7 a.m., and on our way to Putahi I went off with a few men, and found the road (a bad one) by which the Hauhaus had brought their horses from Moturoa when their main body went up the country.

The Ngatiporou and Rifles left us at Putahi for Patea, and the Wairoa Rifle Volunteers returned to Wairoa, arriving at 4 p.m.

I do not think that there are any Natives on the Whenuakura, or food for any; the tracks seen below Putahi probably having been those of a small party who most likely came from the direction of the Patea River to visit the place. There are no doubt some few canoes on the river; but as, of course, they are hidden, they cannot be found without searching the river banks, which can only be done by a tolerably strong party in canoes, and at a great expenditure of time and labour.

The Ngatiporou I must praise most highly, they being the best bushmen I have seen, and also most willing and obedient in every respect.

The Patea and Wairoa Rifles did their best, though on the first and second days some of the men did not march so well as afterwards.

I may mention that on my return to this post smoke was reported to me as having been seen in the afternoon, at the rear of Okatuku. Captain Bryce also reports having seen smoke from Nukumaru in the same direction.

I have, &c.,

ROBT. N. HAWES, Captain,
Commanding W.R.V.

Colonel Lyon, Commanding Patea Militia District.

No. 37.

Copy of a Letter from Major NOAKE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

(No. 224.)

SIR,—

Militia Office, Wanganui, 29th April, 1869.

I have the honor to enclose you a copy of Captain Kells' report of his reconnoissance, by which you will perceive that although no signs of Natives have been observed recently, yet valuable knowledge of the country is obtained, as well as keeping the country free from marauding parties.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. Colonel Haultain, Defence Minister,
Wellington.M. NOAKE, Major,
Commanding Wanganui Militia District.

Enclosure in No. 37.

Copy of a Letter from Captain KELLS to Major NOAKE.

SIR,—

Weraroa Redoubt, 28th April, 1869.

I have the honor to inform you that, in accordance with orders received, I proceeded with the

force, as per margin,* taking two days, provisions with me, to search for Native tracks on the right bank of the Waitotara River, and, if successful in finding a track or tracks, to ascertain whether the Natives had lately visited any of the settlements on the parts of the river to which the tracks led, and generally, or as far as possible, to ascertain whether the rebel Natives had returned to the district, &c.

At 8 a.m., on Monday, the 26th instant, I started from the redoubt, crossed the Waitotara River on to the right bank at Papatupu, and reached Thurou, an old camping-ground of Titokowaru's, at a quarter to 12 o'clock noon, walking at the rate of three miles an hour at least, so that, allowing for the half hour occupied in crossing the river at Papatupu, this camping-ground must be about ten miles from Weraroa Redoubt by the track we took, which is the usual one, and well defined.

I had the advantage of knowing the track this far myself, as I visited this camping-ground, under your own personal command, about a month before, when searching for a supposed track leading along the Hammack Range, and for other reconnoitring purposes.

As you are aware, this old camp is situated in a clearing of about three acres, surrounded by heavy timber and much underwood; tracks have been cut everywhere through the latter, evidently for the purpose of procuring material for making the 150 whares of which the camp was originally composed, capable of affording good shelter to 800 persons; this old encampment is separated from the Hammacks by a narrow and the most precipitous gloomy ravine I have seen anywhere.

Having given the men an hour and a quarter to take dinner and rest, I proceeded, in company with twenty special volunteers, for the purpose of searching for a track to the river, and I was fortunate enough to find a well-defined track leading to the mouth of the Kopowawa Creek, where the first and largest canoe was found on the Waitotara expedition; this track is again taken up on the opposite side of the river at Tutonga, and leads to Pokia, where the Waitotara expedition stopped on the second night. The track enters the bush at the back of Titokowaru's old camp (and ours for the night), and keeps an easterly direction for about three hundred yards, when you get on to a fern flat of about 200 acres surrounded by bush; you cross this flat on to a ridge running about east by north, till the ridge branches into two spurs, one running east by north, with a good track to Kopowawa, where, as I have said, the first canoe was found by the Waitotara expedition, and thence across the river to Pokia; the other spur, with an apparent track running about south-east, comes out on the river bank a little above Teherorou.

Having examined the track to the mouth of the Kopowawa, I returned to Thorou (Titokowaru's old camping-ground) about 4 p.m., where the expedition camped for the night.

I may sum up this day's work by saying that there is no good well-defined track from Weraroa Redoubt to Pokia (where the Waitotara expedition stopped on the second night) by crossing the river twice, first at Tutonga, and again at Pokia; Tutonga, I may repeat, is nearly opposite the mouth of the creek where the canoe was found, and where the track we were on comes out on the river bank.

Tuesday, the 27th instant.—Breakfast over and fires out a little before 6 a.m.; at half-past 6 started on the track found yesterday, but had not proceeded more than 150 yards when the leading files got on a wrong track, trustingly followed by the whole force; and in trying to rectify the mistake the expedition remained for three hours lost in the bush, performing circles and half-circles, and all sorts of doublings and windings in single file. At last I brought the men to a standstill, and Captain Bryce took the Native with him in one direction; I sent Corporal Ginger, his brother, and two other men in another direction; and I took two men with me in a different direction; and shortly afterwards Corporal Ginger found the old camp, and so got on the right track, and in a quarter of an hour more we were out of the bush. It was curious to observe that the Native, with all his boasted knowledge of the bush, was as completely lost as any of us. Once out of the bush we soon crossed the fern flat, got along the ridge in very quick time till we came to the spur leading south-east, and commenced a most difficult descent to the river bank, which we reached about half a mile above where Captain Hawes was encamped on the opposite side, cutting a track the whole way. From this point we forced our way through scrub and tangled bush till we came out on a clearing opposite to where the Waitotara expedition camped under the cracker trees the first night of the expedition. Rested half an hour and turned towards home: got out of the bush by a steep but otherwise good track at Kotaika, and reached the redoubt at 6 p.m., wet to the skin, it having rained the whole way from Taheuroa, about three hours and a half. The men arrived at the redoubt very little the worse for the wear, and, as usual, in the best of spirits, although they were eleven hours and a half on foot, and the travelling from the top of the spur to opposite the cracker trees was most fatiguing, as it was forcing and cutting through the whole way.

I saw no signs of the Natives anywhere I went. Captain Bryce asked leave to accompany me to day with four of his men to learn the tracks; and as I saw no signs of the Natives, and consequently little danger likely to result in allowing him to separate from his troop, I thought it an advantage that he should come for the purpose indicated.

The remainder of Captain Bryce's troop were sent to Kotaika, to keep our retreat open on the old track from Taheuroa, if necessary. I have to thank Captain Bryce for giving me every assistance in his power. Mr. J. F. Kells accompanied the expedition as a volunteer, and would have been an important auxiliary if we had met with the Natives. Dr. Bestic, constable in the Armed Constabulary, accompanied the expedition as surgeon, &c. I have, &c.

THOS. KELLS, Captain,
Commanding Wanganui Veteran Volunteers.

P.S.—From here an expedition can reach the mouth of the Kopowawa Creek (where the canoe was found) in four hours and a half, and thence to Pokia in less than an hour and a half more, or six hours from here to Pokia; the only difficulty would be in crossing the river from the mouth of the creek to Tutonga and back again at Pokia.

* Veteran Volunteers:—1 Captain, 2 Sergeants, 50 Rank and File. Total, 53. Kai Iwi Troop:—1 Captain, 2 Sergeants, 15 Troopers. Total, 18. Armed Constabulary:—Constable Bestic, M.D.

In four hours and a half an expedition can come out on the river bank about half a mile above Taheuroa *via* Thurou (Tito's old camp), and an expedition would reach the lower settlement of Taheuroa *via* Kotaika in three hours and a half; and so an enemy in this important settlement might be attacked in front and rear simultaneously, if necessary, while he would be quite open to attack from the left bank also.

T. KELLS, Captain,
Wanganui Veteran Volunteers.

No. 38.

Copy of a Letter from Lieut.-Colonel LYON to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

(No. 19.)

SIR,—

Patea, 7th May, 1869.

I have the honor to state that I left this post on Monday morning, 3rd inst., at 9 a.m., force as per margin,* for the purpose of exploring the Patea River. I succeeded in procuring five canoes, though not very good, just capable of carrying six days' provisions—the force, in addition, having two days' served out. I crossed the Patea River at Hukatere, and marched to Otauto, at which place a halt was made.

Fresh tracks having been seen, I sent out a scouting party of No. 9 Division A.C. (Ngatiporou), led by Hatiwhera. A short time afterwards I received the information that two Hauhaus had been shot. On making inquiries, I learnt that the scouts came suddenly upon three Hauhaus in an open fern flat. They dodged each other for some time, and when two out of the three were almost surrounded by the scouts, Hatiwhera stepped out, and walked up to the Hauhaus with his gun reversed; they did likewise. On being disarmed—one of a breech-loading carbine and revolver, the other of a double-barrelled gun—they put the question, "Where is Kemp?" The reply was, "We have nothing to do with Kemp, we are Ngatiporous;" on hearing which one of them said, "If this is so there is no chance for us;" and such was the case, for they were immediately shot. The third had succeeded in escaping into the bush.

Not being able to find any track down to the river from Otauto, I became anxious about the canoes, but about 4 p.m. Mr. Booth, R.M., who had kindly volunteered to take charge of them, came up, informing me they were about two miles and a half higher up the river. I sent a message to the scouts to camp in the bush for the night, and marched with the rest of the force to the bank of the river, the canoes being alongside, and bivouacked there for the night.

Early next morning a report was brought in that one of the scouts, Horera by name, having fallen in with fresh tracks, followed them, and came upon two Natives, both of whom he shot. One was Te Iraia, chief of the Pakakohe Tribe, the other proved to be a woman dressed like a man, viz., a mat round the loins, and shirt, and when called upon to stand refused to do so, and was shot whilst running away. Another party of scouts saw about forty Hauhaus, twenty of whom escaped by canoes, the remainder scattered in different directions in the bush.

I marched at 7.30, taking an inland track, the canoes being sent on a short time previously, with orders to stop at the first clearing and communicate with me. I had not marched above three or four hundred yards when I learnt that two of the canoes had upset, in attempting to pass an eel-weir. I returned to the bank of the river, and after three hours' work the canoes were righted.

From the great height of the banks and dense bush down to the water's edge, I came to the conclusion it would be impossible to communicate with the canoes on my march inland, so ordered the provisions to be put on shore, leaving them in charge of an officer and twenty men, having issued two more days' ration to the force. By this time it was past noon. With the Ngatiporous in advance, I followed a bush track for about two miles, and came on to a large fern flat, where I saw the two Natives that had been shot the day previous, and recognised them as two who had formerly lived at Taumaha, near Manutahi. Struck again into the bush, following a badly-defined track, which evidently led in the direction parallel to the river. The path, if such it can be called, and which none but very intelligent Native bushmen could have found, was very harassing to the men, being intersected with supplejack and other undergrowth. After about six miles of this kind of work, and evening coming on, I halted near a stream, and bivouacked for the night. After dark fires were allowed to be lighted, and the men made themselves as comfortable as a most dreary damp bush and a soaking wet night would allow them. Breakfasted before daylight, and marched at 7 a.m.; about noon began to descend into the gorge of the Patea River, which runs about a thousand feet below; about half-way down arrived at a clearing, on a piece of flat land, and from thence could see signs of cultivation on the opposite (right) bank, and therefore concluded was in the vicinity of a settlement. Continuing the descent, reached another flat, and from thence sent out scouts; following them up, arrived at a deserted village, and found that the Hauhaus had escaped by canoes up the river. No signs of any tracks whatever could be found on either bank of the river by which a force could have marched. I remained there for the night, and was obliged reluctantly to return, after burning the village.

I believe firmly, from reports of scouts and my own observation, that the only means of further progress up this river is by canoes. From a letter picked up in a whare, I found that the name of the village was Omaruika; by the bush track, I consider it about twenty miles from Patea.

I marched at daylight, and arrived in camp at 4 p.m. The men in good heart. The Ngatiporou danced a war dance on their arrival, the men giving them three cheers.

* No. 6 Division A.C.:—1 Sub-Inspector; 1 Acting Sub-Inspector; 2 Sergeants; 51 Rank and File: 55. No. 9 A.C. (Ngatiporou):—3 Native Officers; 1 Acting Sub-Inspector; 3 Sergeants; 63 Rank and File: 70. Wairou Rifles:—1 Captain; 1 Subaltern; 2 Sergeants; 21 Rank and File: 25. Carlyle Rifles:—1 Subaltern; 2 Sergeants; 26 Rank and File: 29. Total, 179.

I have much pleasure in bearing testimony to the European portion of the force under my command for bushwork, vieing as they do with their Natives comrades, who of course are quite at home in this kind of warfare.

I must in justice say that the Ngatiporou are the best body of Natives it has ever been my fortune to command. To the officers I am much indebted for the manner with which they severally carried out my orders.

My thanks are also due to J. Booth, Esq., R.M., for valuable assistance rendered.

I have, &c.,

WILLIAM C. LYON, Lt.-Col.,

Commanding Field Force, Patea District.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

No. 39.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel WHITMORE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Fort Galatea, 18th May, 1869.

My diary having been sent by another route, which will I fear delay it, I send this report to you overland.

On the 5th the column under Major Roberts, and on the 4th that under Lieut.-Colonel St. John, marched from their respective camps by the routes already decided. Lieut.-Colonel St. John has reported fully the incidents of his march, but the report has unfortunately been sent enclosed in my diary. I accompanied Major Roberts' column myself, as I feared some complication with the Arawas, who are so notorious for giving trouble, and because I was unwilling in such an event that the responsibility should devolve upon a junior officer who was so weak in Europeans.

On the 6th, Ahikereru was surprised at about noon. The Hauhaus were scattered about in the valley collecting their crops, so that all could not be killed. They made a show of resistance, but were speedily driven off—Fox's Arawas being the nearest, and getting first into the pa, which was fairly fortified in a mixed Native and European manner. Six men were shot, among whom was Matthew, a noted prophet and cannibal. It was unfortunate that some of the men were absent ambuscading another road, by which the column was expected, and others assisting Te Kooti. About fifty prisoners were taken, women and children, with much plunder and very large stores of provisions.

The Arawas could not be induced to go on that day, and Mr. Clarke recommended me to be satisfied with the day's work, lest by urging them while they were indisposed to move, I should have a difficulty in getting them on at all.

Next day we waited till 11 a.m. when, finding the Arawas still not moving, Major Roberts and the Europeans moved off, the chief Fox accompanying the column, and thereby assisting very much in inducing the tribe ultimately to go on. Mr. Clarke, Civil Commissioner, whose influence over the Arawas is probably greater than that of any other single individual, and who to further the interests of the public service had volunteered to take charge of them in spite of recent illness and physical weakness, remained after the Europeans marched, and ultimately brought on the tribe.

As the roads in the Uriwera country are chiefly along river beds which become impassable in rain, and as Lieut.-Colonel St. John depended upon the support of Major Roberts' column, it was necessary to push forward at all hazard, and even without the Pikau men bearing our ammunition and bacon, who remained with their tribe. The march of the 7th, like that of the 5th and 6th, was mainly in the bed of a river, in a narrow defile. The crossings were however more numerous, being no less than fifty-five. The Corps of Guides led with the greatest caution, but in such narrow passes it is impossible to avoid receiving the first fire compatibly with reasonable progress. Seven miles is a long march in the Uriwera country. One mile a day could not be traversed if the column had to wait for flankers to scramble through the cliffs and brushwood of the river banks. At length the enemy opened fire, and after a smart skirmish was driven off, probably with some loss, as a man shot through and saturated with blood was picked up, and a man fell in another place close to the leading guides. Three of our men were hit, all of the Corps of Guides. One of these was Hemi, a well-known Native from Taranaki, much respected in this force, and who wore a watch and pistol presented to him by the officers of the 43rd Light Infantry, for his gallantry on many occasions when acting as their guide. This poor fellow died the same evening; the other two were Europeans, and were severely, not dangerously, wounded. The column showed the greatest spirit in this affair, closing up and rushing forward at once, while No. 4 dashed into the scrub, and made its way round the position.

Here a halt became necessary, and the column slept the night. Next morning the wounded were sent back with an escort, and Mr. Clarke, whose wound, received in the war at the Bay of Islands, caused him much pain, and could proceed no further, was compelled to return.

During the night the Arawas declared their intention of returning at once, as this country was too dangerous; but Fox came down from his picquet, and with great vehemence and contemptuous expressions replied to the speakers. Mr. Clarke also spoke, and with effect. Ultimately they agreed to go on, and Fox offered to take the lead if he was allowed to fire into suspicious places. All object of concealment being at an end, I sent him in front accordingly and allowed him to fire, though I did not anticipate opposition.

On the 8th the road was over a succession of very steep heights, ending at a spot called Tahuaroa where there was a kainga, which was abandoned, as the column approached, at 2 p.m. From this spot a view was obtained of the whole Ruatahuna basin with a few open spots, relieving the monotony of the endless bush. Below was Pairau's pa, that at least he has lately occupied, and we perceived a red flag hoisted within it. A large force was about the place which I felt satisfied was Lieut.-Colonel St. John's column. Although, measured on the map, we were not, perhaps, more than two miles from this pa, it was after dark before we had descended to the Whakatane. The hill is almost a precipice. I observe Mr. Hunter Brown, whose report of the country is exceedingly correct, calls the difference of level

1,500 feet. It would certainly be a good day's work for loaded men to get up this hill. Having left the Natives and Europeans at the Whakatane, I pushed on with what remained of the Corps of Guides and reached Lieut.-Colonel St. John's camp, feeling sure that he was in possession of the pa, though the Arawas could not be induced to believe it. The cheers of our men, in answer to my bugle, could not be mistaken even at a distance of half a mile in the bush. Lieut.-Colonel St. John surprised Omarateani much as Major Roberts' column did Ahikereru, and killed about as many, though the women escaped. He had been waylaid at Hukanui very much as the other column was, and after that I feel sure that the parties before each column were recalled to Ruatahuna, to cover the retreat of the women.

The enemy made a very poor fight at Ruatahuna, abandoning it about the time the other column came in sight, but inflicted some loss upon Lieut.-Colonel St. John's advance. On the whole the two columns have suffered lightly; but two valuable officers, whose death is deeply regretted, Lieutenant White and Sub-Inspector Travers, were killed while with Lieut.-Colonel St. John. The Natives from the Whakatane side gave little assistance, and the fighting devolved upon the Europeans. They would not even scout, but obstinately remained in rear. Now, as these are tribes who have often proved their valour like the Arawas in open country, an idea may be formed of the prestige we have had to combat in the Native mind during this expedition.

It was impossible next day to push on. We had wounded, and to leave a post was almost impracticable, for the pa and all the ground about was commanded on every side, and the garrison could only obtain provisions by foraging at a distance. I therefore made up my mind to submit to a delay of two days, which the whole of the Natives said they required.

The 9th and 10th were lost, except inasmuch as during these days foraging parties explored the country, destroying kaingas and food. On the 10th a trifling skirmish took place, which I supported in the belief that it was a serious attack. It proved nothing of the kind, and Lieut.-Colonel St. John very properly put an end to it; but the Natives made up their minds that it was really Te Kooti at whom they had fired so much, instead of a few unhouseholded Uriweras. This notion grew so strong that I agreed to patrol the country next day. All this delay was contrary to the interests of the expedition. Our true policy was to press on and anticipate Te Kooti's march from Waikare Moana. We had every reason to suppose that the march would not be opposed except by him, and knew him to be at the lake. Meanwhile, no persuasion would induce the Pikau men to go back under an escort to Ahikereru for more ammunition and to remove the wounded, and the combats going on all round the camp with a few scattered individuals, though wasting powder, could not be entirely stopped.

On the 11th we had arranged a movement to explore the vicinity, when Te Kooti's advanced guard came in sight about one and a half mile off down the Waikare track. I sent out Fox, and supported him with 100 men under Major Roberts. Fox drove back the enemy brilliantly enough, though smartly fired upon. After this he laid an ambuscade, and the troops apparently retreated. Te Kooti's advanced guard again moved on, but the front man was shot. On this Te Kooti sounded a bugle, and the ambuscade party retired. Fox gave as his reason for drawing in his lines closer to the pa that the enemy was in great force, and sure to attack on the only open ground near. I waited for this attack in vain, however, Te Kooti's party being evidently more alarmed than ourselves, their sentries having fired frequently during the night at imaginary assailants.

Next morning I moved forward again towards the lake, but the Natives did not make up their bundles, and went light. The Arawas were to make a circuit, and the Europeans to take the direct attack. This they did in very good style, and carried the hill with feeble opposition. The enemy retreated down the gorge, leaving a picquet. We then gave time to the Arawas to get round, and again moved on. The picquet fired at Major Mair and some seven or eight Natives who had got in front of our men, and very slightly wounded Martin of the Ngatipikiao. All the Natives at once retired, leaving Major Mair, who very gallantly rushed forward with only one man, and discharged all the chambers of his revolver at the picquet before it had time to reload. The picquet ran off, followed by Major Mair and the Europeans. The front Arawas reached the track from their circuit just as the picquet was passing, and fired. H. Pukuatua (Fox being unable to go from his cough) led the Arawas, and, as the Arawas generally do, made a dashing advance. Te Kooti was drawn up on a spur, and fired a volley. The Arawas replied, and pushed on, capturing and killing three men who could not escape. After this Te Kooti hurried away, pursued down the valley by the Arawas, followed by the Armed Constabulary. At length after a couple of hours the pursuit came to an end, and the Arawas returned, reporting Te Kooti out of reach. Not having our packs, I agreed unwillingly to defer further pursuit till next day, and to collect food meanwhile. The whole tribe now assembled on the hill first taken and began speaking. They would go no further, they said, though willing to fight here; we were short of powder, let us send back. I agreed to this, and returned to camp, leaving Major Roberts entrenched on the hill. All evening the korero went on. At last the chief Fox came to me and said the Arawas (whose decision would of course entirely guide the Whakatane Natives) wished to go back, that no bearers would go next morning for ammunition, and that he advised me, if this proved to be the case, to call out those who wanted to go through with me. I decided to go on if 100 could be got. At the same time, having an arm of the lake to pass to reach Tiki Tiki, I made up my mind not to attempt to push on without some Natives. It proved as Fox said, and only sixty with himself and Rewi came over to my side.

I now received a letter from the Arawas to the effect that next day they would go back. It now turned out that a private arrangement had all along existed among them not to go beyond Ruatahuna, which, as they had been clearly and expressly told that they would have to go to Waikare and Maungapowhatu when they were engaged, was not straightforward. However, I could not alter their determination, and Mr. Clarke, who might perhaps have done so, was unluckily away. Seeing this, I determined to go to Waikare without them, if they would carry out the wounded, which the Whakatanes were found willing to do. I now issued all the reserve ammunition equally, and drew aside my camp from that of the Natives on the lake side. In the night Fox found that others of his tribe had come up determined neither to go with the Arawas nor to go to the lake. He did not like to abandon these people, nor to break his promise to me. In this dilemma he asked me to decide for

him. As unwilling Natives would be of little use to me, and as the difficulties before us were still greater than those we had overcome, and it was very doubtful whether we should be able to find our way to Waikare in the snow without guides, I had no real choice but to give up that portion of the operations. Accordingly I gave orders to march back by Oputao on another track, and nearer the lake, which was the only considerable kainga not destroyed as yet, and after burning it returned to Ahikereru on the 16th. The enemy did not molest our march, nor seriously harass the other column, at which, however, a few shots were fired at first. On the march Major Mair and the Arawas destroyed the Horomanga kaingas, and arrived at the mouth of the gorge this morning, having safely and carefully brought down our wounded. The total loss of the enemy it is difficult to say exactly, but twenty bodies were found (one was a brother of Whenuanui's). Fifty prisoners have been taken. Immense quantities of provisions have been consumed or destroyed, and every kainga of note, except the settlements of Maungapowhatu and Waikare, have been destroyed. The prestige of this unknown and difficult country has been lessened, and for the first time in their history the "Tuhoe" (the old and favourite name of the Uriwera) have seen a war party enter their country, pass completely through it, sit down and occupy their principal settlement, and leave it without any serious loss. As it has turned out, Lieut.-Colonel Herrick did not suffer from the want of that co-operation I was unable to afford him, which reconciles me to the disappointment. In all their former wars the Uriwera have hunted their assailants out of the mountains with terrible loss, and this quite accounts for the evident anxiety, not to say fear, observable among our Native allies throughout this expedition. I find it difficult to say, without fear of being thought to show partiality, how admirably our men have behaved throughout. Living on potatoes, labouring under heavy packs, with their clothes torn to rags, and their boots destroyed, their cheerfulness and ready obedience at all times cannot be too highly praised. Poor fellows who were bleeding in their feet, who have had hardly a day's rest since November last, and in spite of the quantities of clothes they have purchased since then, can scarcely muster a sound garment amongst them, were yet ready and anxious to face the Huirau snow-covered heights, and to risk possible starvation or a long retreat, from the moment they heard of my wish to go to Waikare. Toiling up these precipitous hills, or wading in the beds of the slaty rivers, they could always keep up with and continue the march at a moderate pace longer than the Maoris; moreover, during the whole expedition they did not waste a single round of ammunition, nor throw away one shot when keeping sentry in the bush. If there was anything to be done they were at once ready; and when no duty was required from them, roamed about the country foraging, destroying crops, burning kaingas, and seeking the enemy's scouts in their several hiding-places in the vicinity. No rations were issued after the 8th, and Lieut.-Colonel St. John's column was rationed to the 7th only. I had 3 lbs. of bacon per man carried and issued gratuitously to the men after that, and with that assistance they made no complaint of their fare.

The officers have all done their duty extremely well, and have carried the same loads and fared the same as the men.

Lieut.-Colonel St. John deserves my full recognition of his energy in pushing on to Ruatahuna, and conduct of his column. Major Roberts also proved that he has qualities of a very superior order as a commander, and showed the greatest attention to his men.

Mr. Clarke, who so kindly took charge of the Arawas, deserves at my hands the warmest thanks for his zealous and valuable assistance.

I must not omit to mention Captain Moorsom, commanding the Tauranga Cavalry Volunteers, who reached his post before the troops arrived at the plains, and who held it in spite of the extreme inclemency of the weather, though disappointed in the arrival of Captain Richardson, left by the Taupo Natives, and unable to obtain any other food but potatoes for a long time. He has since been of great use in assisting to bring up supplies with his gallant and efficient corps.

Finally, I desire to bring to the notice of Government the services rendered by the chief Fox, who has conducted himself in a specially creditable manner, and supported me throughout. The chief Rewi also followed his example in this respect.

I am in hopes that this force may speedily be established firmly in this district. This fort is very well situated, and well built, and I am now about to commence the work requisite to make the line available for bullock-drays to Fort Alfred.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. the Defence Minister.

G. S. WHITMORE, Colonel.

P.S.—My diary has just been returned to me, having come out with the Native Column. I send on Lieut.-Colonel St. John's report, and shall transmit the diary by next mail, a portion of the same period being described in this.

Enclosure in No. 39.

Copy of a Letter from Lieut.-Colonel St. JOHN to Colonel WHITMORE.

SIR,—

Pata Hoata, 9th May, 1869.

I have the honor to report that, according to your instructions, I left Opouriao on the 4th instant with the force as per margin,* and arrived that night at Tunanui. On the 5th I reached Waikariwhenua, but could not proceed further on account of the delay in the arrival of the Native Contingent. On the 6th I began the ascent of Te Wharau hill, and in the afternoon, at the foot of it on the further side, surprised the kainga called Omaru Teangi, where we killed six men (Lieutenant White, Opotiki Volunteers, who had charge of the scouts, killing two himself).

* Armed Constabulary:—2 Inspectors or Field Officers, 4 Sub-Inspectors, 8 Acting Sub-Inspectors or Subalterns, 2 Assistant-Surgeons, 1 Senior Sergeant, 20 Sergeants, 242 Rank and File. Native Contingent:—1 Field Officer, 144 Rank and File. Pikaus:—35 Rank and File. Total, 421.

On the 7th we followed the bed of the Whakatane, which we struck here; and I regret to say that, at the foot of a steep hill called Hukanui, an ambuscade fired upon the scouts, depriving the country of a cool and gallant officer, in the person of Lieutenant White, who was shot dead. His scouts very gallantly got his body out of the stream under fire. The hill was defended by the Hauhaus from the top, and from another which flanked it. However, I managed to turn the position which was evacuated. To effect this I ordered Sub-Inspector Gundry with No. 8, and Major Mair with his Natives, to force a track through the fern; but it was with the greatest difficulty that Major Mair and myself managed to push on the Natives. After letting the men have dinner on the top of the hill, I moved on for about three miles, when I came in sight of Whenuanui's pa, Tahora. I halted on a ferny ridge about 600 yards from it, an open plain being between the enemy and myself. Perceiving that an advance along this must entail heavy loss, I sent Lieut.-Colonel Fraser with No. 1, and Major Mair with Natives, to my left, to make their way through a bush, and seize a cleared plateau commanding the pa; at the same time I directed Sub-Inspector McDonnell with No. 2, and Sub-Inspector Gundry with No. 8, to work round through scrub to the right, so as to reach the edge of the bush lining the clearing round the pa. The first movement was decisive. As soon as the enemy saw Colonel Fraser's men surmount the ascent, and bound along the plateau, he made a precipitate retreat, and at sundown I had the whole force in the pa. On the 8th my march was later than usual, as I distributed the bacon and ammunition I had, cleaned arms, and destroyed the palisading. At about 11 a.m. I came in sight of Pata Hoata, Peiroa's pa. Seeing a hill commanding it on the further side, I endeavoured to work round to it through the bush by my left. Lieut.-Colonel Fraser however found that he would have to fight his way through this, it being held by the enemy who thus flanked me. In consequence of this I ordered him to send No. 4, and part of No. 1, under Sub-Inspector Travers into this bush, and went round to the other flank. Here, with No. 8, and a sub-division of No. 2, I managed to get within ten yards of the pa, and here I determined to establish a sap. However, before the tools could be got, the enemy guessed my intent and bolted. Sub-Inspector McDonnell went in pursuit, but ineffectually. I deeply regret that, in holding the bush, Sub-Inspector Travers received a mortal wound, the man who inflicted it falling dead himself almost at the same time. I established myself in the pa, sent out pickets and a foraging party, and awaited your arrival.

I must beg to pay a hearty tribute to the endurance and gallantry of the European force under my command, officers, non-commissioned officers, and men, all obeyed orders implicitly, and worked together with a zeal and willingness I have rarely witnessed. I beg to bring to your favourable notice the whole of the centre column, for it is impossible for me to particularize. Sub-Inspector Scannell acted as adjutant of the column, and rendered me every assistance. The officers, non-commissioned officers and men of No. 1 right sub-division, No. 2, and No. 8, skirmished most pluckily up close to the pa, led by Lieut.-Colonel Fraser and their officers, and the small detachment of No. 4 stuck manfully to poor Sub-Inspector Travers. At the same time I must report to you that the conduct of the Native allies was far from satisfactory; Major Mair had to work hard to induce them to do anything. They refused to join the advance, and it was with the greatest difficulty they could be induced either to carry pikaus or face any fire. From this censure I must except Tiwai Pehana, of the Whakatoeas, who has done his best to help Major Mair to get men, and by his example done all he could to make them useful. Had it not been for Major Mair's exertions, I doubt if I could have got the Native force on at all. I enclose a return of casualties, which I deeply regret is so heavy.

I have, &c.,

To the Hon. Colonel Whitmore,
Commanding Colonial Forces.

J. H. H. ST. JOHN, Lieut.-Colonel,
Commanding Centre Column, Field Force.

P.S.—I forgot to mention the number of the Native loss; I put it down at—

At Omaru Teani	6 men; another was reported.
At Tahora	1 „
At Pata Hoata	2 „
Total	9 men.

Besides these I presume others were wounded, and got away somehow or another.

J. H. H. ST. JOHN, Lieut.-Colonel.

NOMINAL RETURN of OFFICERS and MEN KILLED and WOUNDED in Action on the 6th, 7th, and 8th May, 1869, belonging to Lieut.-Colonel St. John's Column.

Rank and Name.	Corps.	Nature of Wounds.	Remarks.
Lieutenant David White...	O.R.	Slightly, right hip	6th May.
Lieutenant David White...	O.R.	Shot dead by a bullet entering right side of neck and making its exit on left side of chest	7th May.
Constable Thos. A. Pearson	No. 8 A.C.	Severely, bullet entering left hip at the apex, and making its exit in front of abdomen	7th May.
Mahi Wi	Ngaitai	Mortally, by a bullet passing through fore-arm and then entering the abdomen; ball lodged	7th May; died 9th May.
Constable Davis	No. 1 A.C.	Mortally, ball entering beneath the ribs of left side, making its exit on right side of spine	8th May; died 9th May.
Constable Matthew Roberts	No. 1 A.C.	Very slightly, left shoulder	8th May.
Constable Carl Hansen ...	No. 2 A.C.	Very slightly, fingers of left hand	8th May.
Lance-Corpl. Edwd. Kelly	No. 2 A.C.	Dangerously; shot through both thighs, causing fracture of left femur	8th May; died 9th May.
Constable Wasley	No. 2 A.C.	Very severely, ball entering the chest, causing a fracture of ninth rib of left side, then taking a course backwards; ball lodged	8th May; ball extracted same day.
Constable Lydon	No. 2 A.C.	Severely, lower third of left thigh; ball lodged ...	8th May.
Constable James Parkinson	No. 2 A.C.	Mortally, left buttock, ball taking an upward course and lodging in the bowels	8th May; died 9th May.
Sub-Inspector H.B. Travers	No. 4 A.C.	Shot dead, bullet entering right side of umbilicus and making its exit at left side of the spine	8th May.
Constable James Hull ...	No. 4 A.C.	Severely, bullet passing through dexter side of the left thigh	8th May.

SAMUEL WALKER,
Assistant Surgeon, Colonial Forces.

RETURN of WOUNDED on the Road from Ahikereru on 7th May, 1869.

Corps.	Name.	Nature of Wound.	Remarks.
Guides ...	Hemi Tauaka	Gunshot, body	Since dead.
Guides ...	Thomas Adamson	Gunshot, arm	Severe.
Guides ...	William Ryan	Gunshot, leg	Severe.

Wm. BROWN,
Assistant Surgeon, A.C.

No. 40.

Copy of a Letter from Major NOAKE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

(No. 285.)

SIR,—

Wanganui, 2nd June, 1869.

I have the honor to forward for your information a diary report of my movements in the Patea District up to this date.

On the 23rd ultimo I assumed command, and made arrangements for the transport of canoes from the Waitotara to the Patea River, also for top-siding the same, making poles, paddles, &c., preparatory to exploring the river. These arrangements I intrusted to Captain Hawes to see carried out. Finding, however, that a week or ten days would elapse before they would be completed, I determined to scour the upper part of the district, and ascertain if possible if rebels were in it, and also explore new country and Native tracks, destroy cultivations and villages.

On the 24th I moved on the Armed Constabulary under Sub-Inspector Goring, and the Carlisle Rifles under Lieutenant Blake to Matangarara, with the view of making it the base of my operations. I brought the Veteran Volunteers under Captain Kells from Weraroa to Patea, leaving a detachment at that post.

25th.—Moved on Captain Kells to Manawapou; the Kai Iwi Cavalry under Captain Bryce from Waitotara to Patea.

26th.—Bryce's men sent on to Mokoia Redoubt. All movements stopped, owing to the incessant rains rendering rivers and creeks impassable.

27th.—The Kai Iwi Cavalry and Veterans moved on and occupied Waihi.

Sub-Inspector Goring so ill from cold that I was compelled to send him back in a cart to Patea for medical treatment.

Mr. Booth had obtained information that a track to the Patea River led from behind Matangarara, and volunteered to conduct a party to endeavour to find it. I thankfully availed myself of Mr. Booth's valuable assistance, and on the 28th placed the Armed Constabulary, the Carlyle Volunteers, and twenty of the Wanganui Native Contingent (Lieutenant Periha Turie), under Mr. Booth's instructions, and started them, with three days' provisions, to strike the Patea River if possible. I sent Mr. Monro with this expedition. I had attached this gentleman to the force as surveyor and draughtsman.

After this party left, I took the Kai Iwi and Veteran Volunteers from Waihi through the Ketemarae clearing, along the track taken by General Chute, and about four miles in the bush I found a village called Orakuku, which I destroyed, then brought the force to Matangarara to form a support to Mr. Booth's party.

29th.—I took the Kai Iwi men and ten of the Native Contingent through Otapawa about three miles, and found the village of Te Wanganui, which I destroyed, with a little other property. The Veterans under Captain Kells struck in behind Keteonatea about seven miles, destroyed a village, cultivations, and a quantity of seed potatoes.

30th.—The Cavalry made a reconnaissance along the Waingongoro River to its mouth, thence to Mokoia. The Veterans and a portion of Wanganui Natives left camp to find a village I had seen the day before, but could not reach owing to the Tangahoe Stream being impassable. They succeeded in finding it after a twelve miles' walk. It proved to be Turangariri, an important village; the whares, capable of accommodating 400 families, were very large and well kept. No crops left in the large cultivations. Numbers of very fine and well-bred pigs. The pa was destroyed. The track leading to it was broad and well beaten, and protected by earthworks. This is the place the rebels retreated to when driven out of Otapawa by General Chute.

31st.—Mr. Booth and party returned after a very fatiguing march, judging from the appearance of the men. They were successful. I have much pleasure in appending Mr. Booth's Report, which will speak for itself. The Veterans marched for Manawapou, and the Kai Iwi Cavalry to Patea.

1st June.—The Cavalry marched to Waitotara; Veterans to Patea; No. 3 Division Armed Constabulary and Carlyle Volunteers to Manawapou; the Wanganui Native Contingent to Patea.

On the 2nd the Armed Constabulary returned to Patea under the command of Lieutenant Smith, of the Wanganui Militia, that officer being a volunteer. I placed him on duty, there being no officer left with the division. During the time the force was out they experienced most inclement weather. Mr. Booth's party in the bush were wet the whole of the time they were out. Nevertheless they did their work cheerfully and well.

I have, &c.,
M. NOAKE,
Major Commanding.

The Hon. Colonel Haultain.

Enclosure in No. 40.

Copy of a Letter from Mr. J. BOOTH, R.M., to Major NOAKE.

SIR,—

Patea, 1st June, 1869.

I have the honor to report for your information, that the expedition which left Matangarara on Friday, the 28th ultimo, with three days' provisions, and of which I went in charge, after passing through Taiporohenui, crossed a stream called Mangemange. We left Otapawa on our left, and entered the bush at a village called Te Wanganui, directly opposite Turangarere. On entering the bush we found an apparently well-worn though not recent track, leading directly inland, and I at once concluded that it led to the Patea River south of Te Ngaire, and to which place Tukino and others of the Tangahoe hapu had retreated after they, with Titokowaru, had left Whakarama. We followed the track, therefore, which led us in a north-easterly direction; and after a rather laborious march, owing to the supple-jack, fallen trees, &c., we halted at about 3 p.m. at a stream, the name of which I do not know. The men at once commenced to put up their "maimais," and to collect firewood for the night; and at sundown, after the sentries had been posted, the fires were lighted, and we were able to dry our clothes, which had become saturated in passing through the wet bush. At daylight next morning (29th), after having breakfasted, we again marched. We had occasional hills to ascend, the road at times leading along a ridge for miles; then descending again, we came on to a large extent of perfectly flat country. On this day we passed the source of the Tangahoe River, a large lake called Rotokare. The marching here was very arduous, as we had to cross a great number of streams; the rest being swampy, the path soon became a mass of mud, intersected by roots of trees, the men going up to their knees in mud at each step. After about a mile of this work, we got on to higher ground, and continued the march until half an hour before dark, when we encamped, observing the same order about fires, &c., as on the previous night. Our second day's journey was much longer than the first, and as yet we had seen nothing to lead us to suppose we were near the Patea River. Old sleeping-camps had been seen at intervals on the road, and on this day we saw one apparently only a few weeks old.

Next morning the Sergeant-Major reported that twenty men were knocked up, and not able to go further. As our provisions were nearly exhausted, I gave orders that the twenty tired men, together with five Natives, should at once start on their journey homeward. I then took twenty Volunteers, together with fifteen Natives, accompanied by Lieut. Blake and Ensign Hiscox, of the Carlyle Rifles, Mr. Monroe, surveyor, and Lieutenant Pehira Turei, Native Contingent, and left the rest of the men in camp under charge of Lieutenant Smith. My proposition was to go in light marching order, walk as far as we could for an hour and a half, and then return to camp, if we did not in that time strike the Patea River. We started accordingly, and in less than an hour we reached the river, which at this point is about 100 yards wide.

Lieut. Blake and myself, with two Native scouts, went a mile or two up the bank of the river; we came upon old encampments. We noticed some recently broken twigs, showing the track, which was here very difficult to find. On climbing a tree we saw an old clearing on the opposite (left) side of the river, but no signs of any recent occupation. As we had no means of getting up a further supply of provisions, we could not explore the country.

The country here is perfectly flat, apparently for many miles, and is thickly covered with magnificent timber trees—rimu, matai, kahikatea, &c. The river is rather rapid, but it has a good depth of water. After exploring the river for some time, we returned to our camp of the previous night, and after a fatiguing day's march we arrived at our first night's camping ground. Our provisions were here quite exhausted.

31st.—I sent on the tired men as soon as it was daylight, and an hour afterwards followed with the rest of the column. About noon we got out of the bush at Te Wanganui. Some seed potatoes were found, several pigs were shot, and we were soon able to make an excellent breakfast. In the afternoon we arrived at Matangarara.

Owing to the nature of the country through which we had to pass, the men got most of their clothes torn off their backs; some also lost the soles off their boots. One man had to march barefooted for two days. I consider the distance from Matangarara to the furthest point we reached to be over thirty miles.

I have learnt since my return, that the part of the country at which we arrived is called Tutaiariari, and that it is about two days' journey from Mangaio, near Pipiriki, on the Wanganui River. The road is called Taukokako, and is the only one known leading in that direction from Taiporohenui.

I have, &c.,

JAMES BOOTH, R.M.

No. 41.

Copy of a Letter from Lieut.-Colonel FRASER to the UNDER SECRETARY, Defence Department.

SIR,—

Fort Galatea, 9th June, 1869.

I have the honor to forward to you a copy of a letter I have addressed to the Honorable Colonel Whitmore, respecting the sad occurrence which has lately taken place.

I have, &c.,

The Under Secretary,
Colonial Defence Office, Wellington.

JAMES FRASER, Lt.-Col.,
Commanding at Galatea.

Enclosure in No. 41.

Copy of a Letter from Lieut.-Colonel FRASER to Colonel WHITMORE.

SIR,

Fort Galatea, 9th June, 1869.

It is my painful duty to call your attention to the annexed statements of Troopers Stephenson and Leary, of the Opotiki Cavalry, relative to the surprise of their party at Opepe on the 7th instant, and the massacre which it is presumed has followed. I have now to detail the steps I have taken in consequence of their report. You will see by their statements that they arrived at this post late yesterday evening. I at once gave orders for a party of troopers (of whom unfortunately there were only four available, but which I increased to eight by mounting three of the Ngatimanawa and one of my own buglers on all the available horses) to proceed in the direction of Opepe, to gain intelligence and to succour any of the fugitives whom they might find.

While awaiting their return this day, I made the following arrangements, viz.:—To withdraw No. 6 Division temporarily (now at the first crossing from Fort Clarke, ninety-eight strong) to hold this post, as there are such large stores of all kinds here, and to proceed myself to-morrow morning on the track Colonel St. John took to Opepe, with as many men as can be spared and some of the Ngatimanawa, to ascertain the fate of those missing: the distance is, I hear, about sixty miles—to take four days' rations, and to march as quickly as I could.

The cavalry sent out having now returned, after proceeding some twenty-five miles without seeing anything, I purpose therefore marching as I had arranged. Brigade-Major Birch accompanies me, and I trust to be able to send you more satisfactory news than it is possible for me to do now.

I have, &c.,

JAMES FRASER, Lt.-Col.,
Commanding at Galatea.

To Colonel Whitmore.

Sub-Enclosure 1 to Enclosure in No. 41.

STATEMENT by Trooper STEPHENSON.

GEORGE STEPHENSON, a trooper in the Opotiki Cavalry, came into camp about 4.30 p.m., on Tuesday, the 8th June, 1869, and stated:—Yesterday morning I, George Leary who has come in with me, Sergeant Dette, McKillop, Lockwood, Sergeant Slattery, T.C., Gill, T.C., Cornet Smith, Lawson, T.C., Ross, O.C., Cook, O.C., and 4 half-castes, Johnson, Potea, Bidwell, and one other, were camped at Opepe. The same morning Colonel St. John, Major Cumming, and an orderly, left with Captain St. George, to go on I think to his place. Captain Moorsom and Mr. Clarke also left—for where I do not know. Between 2 and 3 p.m. it was raining, and we were all lying in the whares; there were two or three armed Maoris came up to the whares; they saluted us as friendly Maoris, said "tenakoe," said they thought we were Hauhaus. One of the men, young Gill, spoke to one of them, who said they were Maoris from the Lake, and not knowing we were Pakehas had come up armed. There were four or five of them close to the whares, and being suspicious I went outside, and seeing some more coming up in skirmishing order, I went to get my arms. One of the Maoris put his gun at full cock in front of my whare door and pointing it at me. I then turned to go into one of the other whares, when he fired at me. I then tried to enter another, and another fired his double-barrelled gun. I then ran for the bush, and saw no more of it. Sergeant Dette was in the bush just before me, and Leary came in at the same time. I heard heavy firing all the time, and I believe all were shot but us three. I could not keep up with Sergeant Dette, who was running fast, and what has become of him I do not know. Leary and I stuck together. We have lost our horses, arms, saddles, &c. The Maoris got round between us and the whares, and fired heavily. There were about 70 or 80 men, as nearly as I can judge, and they were well clothed.

George Leary states :—About 4 o'clock yesterday about 70 Maoris came to Opepe on foot ; they pretended they were friendly Natives, and shook hands with us. We could see them getting to the doors of the whares, and as we could not get our guns we made a rush for the bush ; Stephenson, I, and Sergeant Dette, got into it, but I do not know where the latter is now. I saw McKillop run into the bush too ; I do not know where he is. I heard firing for about five minutes after we went into the bush. Stephenson and I got out of the bush before dark, and have come straight home. We have seen no tracks along the road, Colonel St. John, Major Cumming, and Captain George went on to the Lake about 11 o'clock the same morning. This is all I know about the matter.

These I certify were made to me.

J. FRASER, Lt.-Col.

Sub-Enclosure 2 to Enclosure in No. 41.

NAMES of OFFICERS, NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS, and MEN who left FORT GALATEA with Colonel ST. JOHN, 4th June, 1869.

Tauranga Cavalry Volunteers.

Captain Moorson.
Lieutenant Clarke.
Sergeant Slattery.
Trooper Bidois, P.
" Bidois, Joseph.
" Gill.
" Johnston.
" Lawson.
" Lockwood.
" Poictier, C.
" Young.

Opotiki Cavalry Volunteers.

Cornet Smith.
Sergeant Dette.
Trumpeter McKillop.
Trooper Cooke.
" Leary.
" Ross.
" Stephenson.

Major Cumming also accompanied Lieut.-Colonel St. John.

No. 42.

Copy of a Letter from Major NOAKE to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

(No. 309.)

SIR,—

Militia Office, Wanganui, 23rd June, 1869.

I have the honor to inform you that Taurua, the Pakahohe chief, on being taken prisoner, told me that there were several of his tribe scattered in the bush behind Whakamara, others again on the Whenuakura River.

Being anxious to capture these people before they could rejoin Titokowaru, who was reported to be at the Ngaere, I despatched Ensign Hori Grey with a detachment of his men to capture these Hauhaus.

On the 21st he returned with forty-nine, of which number fifteen are men, and five of them were without arms. I have not guaranteed their lives ; they are in close confinement.

There are now of this tribe 172 in the hands of Government.

Lieut.-Colonel Lyon has resumed the command of the Patea District ; I have returned to Wanganui.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. Colonel Haultain, Defence Minister,
Wellington.

M. NOAKE, Major,
Commanding Wanganui Militia District.

TELEGRAMS RELATIVE TO THE WAIKARE-MOANA EXPEDITION.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, April 22, 1869.

DESPATCHES just received from Whitmore. I have no letter, but Herrick, fortunately here, has one dated Maketu, 19th, marked "Confidential," substance as follows:—Operations contemplated against the Ureweras from East Coast by Waikare-Moana side. Richmond going down to Poverty, &c., to collect the A.C., taking Gudgeon and Porter. Richmond wishes to meet Herrick at Wairoa, to take command of mixed column of Europeans and Natives. Richmond purposes taking some Ngatiporous and some of Ihaka Whanga's people. Whitmore thinks such a column will succeed, as they will be pressed from Maketu side, and country is well known, and he presses Herrick very much to take command; this Herrick has at once agreed to. Whitmore wishes Herrick to go off quietly to Wairoa without mentioning object, and to go prepared for another but shorter and easier Ruakiture affair. Whitmore is going in from two sides, and will try to work up to Herrick. Supplies, he says, will be comparatively easy to Waikare, and it turns out that Maungapowhatu is not far off. This is all he says.

RUSSELL.

Major HERRICK to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 22nd April, 1869.

WHITMORE has asked me to take command of an auxiliary expedition to co-operate with him against Ureweras. I am ready to go as soon as I can get my things from him. Have sent an orderly, and hope to start to-morrow by 2 p.m. Russell has telegraphed to you contents of letter, and says he will provide a cutter if necessary to-morrow to Wairoa.

HERRICK.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Major HERRICK.

22nd April, 1869.

VERY glad to hear that you will undertake command of Wairoa column. "Lyttelton" steamer brought some fifty men from Wanganui last night, and will take them on to join you as soon as possible, and I will tell Lambert to send all foot Constables that are at Napier also. Let me know if you want anything.

HAULTAIN.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 23rd April, 1869.

HERRICK is with me now, and tells me Lambert has been telegraphing to you about Natives. On 21st, your telegram says I am to have all arrangements with the Natives. Let this be strictly observed, or there will be conflict and mischief. I shall do nothing to commit you, but Natives must not be snubbed. Have you had time to consider my proposal about mixed Volunteers for Herrick's force. Henare Tomoana is keen to go with Herrick into the Urewera country, or anywhere. "Wellington" just coming in; will not go to-day. Agent will see captain, and let me know soon. No available craft here at present. "Star" will not be back till Monday.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RICHMOND to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 24th April, 1869.

JUST arrived per "St. Kilda." Left Whitmore on Wednesday night at Matata. St. John and Fraser at Whakatane. Whitmore would move by Rangitaike, Tapiri, Ahikereru, to Ruatuhuna and Maungapowhatu, with 150 Europeans and 300 Arawa; the other column, 300 Europeans and 150 Ngatipukeko and others, to move up the Whakatane direct to Ruatuhuna and Maungapowhatu. There are fifty local cavalry moving to join 100 Ngatitu Wharetoa on the Upper Rangitaike or Taupo; the "Sturt" is tending these parties. I have warned Ngatiporou and Newland on my way up; have thrown surplus stores from Turanga into Wairoa; left Bower to organize pack transport; called at Mohaka where Richardson's men were landing in consequence of a report of return of Hauhaus; they were seen by Withers yesterday at Putere, and I fear have reached the lake. I propose to replace Newland's by H. Potae's men, and to form a column of 180 A. C. and 250 Natives of all tribes at Wairoa, first to endeavour to intercept the retreat of the Mohaka party to the lake, next to move by Puketapu to Maungapowhatu. Perhaps we may take Onepoto on the lake, as I believe the lake is the real Alsatia. I wish you could come down here and take charge. Please say to-night whether you agree to this movement. We start with stores for Wairoa at 4 a.m. to-morrow.

RICHMOND.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, April 25th, 1869.

WE had a long conference with Herrick last night, and Richmond arranged plans of campaign with him. Richmond started for Mohaka to embark all Richardson's troopers there. Richardson himself, who came here with Richmond, started this morning to march with over twenty troopers, now at Petane, for Wairoa, where he expects to arrive to-morrow evening. It has been decided that all the available men in "Lyttelton" shall go on at once, and steamer return for Henare Tomoana's contingent of fifty picked men, which Herrick remains to-day to organize and get ready. He will start for Pakowhai as soon as I have a talk with you about terms. We propose that Henare shall engage to serve during the campaign against the Ureweras. Then comes the question of pay, which was omitted to be discussed with Richmond. Herrick and I think they should have pay for this limited number of good fighting men, and he wishes to be able to make the arrangement definite and complete. Would it not be better to get "Ahuriri," expected to-morrow from Auckland, to run across to Wairoa with Henare's men and the stores, &c., wanted? This would greatly forward the expedition, and time is everything. She could take boats from Napier to land everything rapidly. You could arrange in Wellington for the steamer to go if wanted. £20 or so would be enough, and well spent money.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

Wellington, 25th April, 1869.

TOMOANA's people will get the same pay as Europeans if they are sworn in for service and understand that they are equally bound to obey orders. 2s. 6d. a day besides rations when within their own districts, and 3s. 6d. a day when in Urewera country. Acting officers and non-commissioned officers in usual proportions. See that this is quite clear. They will receive no clothing.

HAULTAIN.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

Wellington, 25th April, 1869.

IF "Lyttelton" is not in when "Ahuriri" arrives, take up the latter to convey men to Wairoa.

HAULTAIN.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 26th April, 1869.

BISCUIT and flour can be had cheaper in Auckland. I would recommend to form a considerable depôt at Wairoa without delay, as we may soon expect easterly weather, and then the bar may be impassable for several days at a time. If Whitmore's large force comes through to Maungapowhatu, it must be supplied from this side, and there should be no chance of a break down in the Commissariat, on which the success of the campaign may depend. Herrick says he saw a Native at Pakowhai to-day, who knows the Urewera country well, and recommends another depôt to be formed at Maungapowhatu. The Native says we shall have to make canoes at Waikare-Moana before Te Waru's pa can be taken. With a supply of axes and adzes, that can soon be done by the force, as there is plenty of timber. Navigation so dangerous from fierce squalls which raise a sea, that two canoes must be lashed together. Shall I send some tools to Wairoa? Richmond says plenty of pack-horses can be got at Wairoa.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 26th April, 1869.

"AHURIRI" in sight; no sign of "Lyttelton." Weather now moderate and fine. If "Star of South" is likely to be here to-day, "Ahuriri" may not be required; but Herrick is anxious to be off as soon as his Natives can be collected. I have got most valuable information from the Bishop and Mr. Colenso about the Lake and Urewera country generally. Herrick is to meet them now, and get it mapped as correctly as possibly.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 26th April, 1869.

THERE may be a difficulty about swearing in Tomoana and his people, Herrick thinks. We think if Tomoana would sign an agreement to serve under Herrick during the Urewera campaign, it would answer all the purpose. These people did not like the idea of being made soldiers exactly. I recommend you to sanction this alternative if we cannot get them to take oath. Reply at once, as Henare is in Napier.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

Wellington, 26th April, 1869.

IF there is any difficulty about swearing in Henare's people, do not insist on it. I have directed Lambert to strike off all scouts except six, and their pay is not to exceed 8s. a day.

HAULTAIN.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 26th April, 1869.

HAVE had long interview with Tomoana and Herrick; Rev. S. Williams, interpreter. He absolutely

refused to take oath, although explained only a temporary arrangement. Would only agree to give his word that he would serve under Herrick's orders during Urewera campaign. After conceding that point he objected to take so few as fifty. Wanted 100 to go. He thought Wairoas were no good. Then he asked about pay of men, then for himself. I could not tell him this exactly. Say what temporary rank you will give him; also pay, and ditto for N.C. officers. He is to be in to-morrow again. It occurs to me he has not much stomach for the Urewera work and may not go after all. Should I meet him half-way and take seventy-five good men, or politely decline to take more than fifty. He always did express a wish to take 100, saying fifty were too few. We have not ignored them, at all events.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

Wellington, 27th April, 1869.

THERE is no use having too many Natives with the force, the great difficulty being the transport of food; but if Henare will not go with less than 100 men, we will agree. No regular officers will be appointed unless the men are sworn in, but two chiefs, at 10s. a-day, five sergeants at 1s. extra, and five corporals at 6d., will be allowed for 100 men.

HAULTAIN.

Telegraphic conversation between Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN and Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

27th April.

Colonel Haultain.—Have you seen Henare this morning?

Mr. Russell.—No, but he is to be in, I believe. Mr. Williams is outside, mounted, to go by way of Pakowhai on his way home, and I asked him quietly to see Henare and advise him to go with the fifty men. More to follow if wanted.

Colonel Haultain.—Does Herrick think his assistance necessary?

Mr. Russell.—He would like it, if possible, without any cooing. Suppose we agree to seventy or seventy-five, that would probably be as many good men as he can get?

Colonel Haultain.—I wish Henare and all the Napier Natives to understand that we are not in any urgent need of their assistance. Say seventy-five men, but reject all that appear inefficient.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 27th April, 1869.

HERRICK has seen Tomoana again, and told him he would agree to fifty men. He replied they had a meeting last night, and resolved not to go under one hundred, and that most of them had returned to-day to their kaingas. Herrick saw plainly there was no real spirit to go at present, and thought best not to press—would be making too much of them. Tomoana pretended his company consisted of about one hundred men, and it would be impossible to weed out the inferior men without making great jealousy. However, he said to Herrick, go on with your five hundred; and if you find enemy very strong, send me word, and I will instantly start overland or by sea with one hundred or two hundred men. It is better to leave it at this. It cannot be said Government has slighted them, and it is fortunate we have incurred no expense whatever about them. Sorry to say there is a great sea on, but weather fine, and it may go down towards night. I shall not detain "Ahuriri" if bar is not certain at Wairoa, but wait for the "Star." Shall send Richmond despatch inland to-night if steamer cannot land.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

Wellington, 27th April, 1869.

I REALLY think that Herrick will be as well without Henare's people; a large force in a very difficult country is only unwieldy.

HAULTAIN.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 27th April, 1869.

WHAT about depôt at Wairoa? I call your serious attention to this, and Herrick is very anxious about it. I shall hear what Richmond says by return of steamer. I confess the difficulties of the whole campaign, at this advanced season, frighten me. I propose sending a despatch, *via* Taupo, to Whitmore, with the latest news of Wairoa force, this evening. Send any telegrams you wish forwarded.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

Wellington, 27th April, 1869.

OF course there must be a depôt of supplies at Wairoa. I see no difficulty about that; the real work will be in packing provisions to the front. What pack-saddles have you? You will have the "Lyttelton" for some days, and should send plenty of biscuit and groceries. I suppose stock is to be had at Wairoa. If the "Ahuriri" returns to Napier from this, she will take anything you require. I shall probably come up in her. Having commenced the expedition we must carry it on with all earnestness.

HAULTAIN.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 27th April, 1869.

STRONG wind from E. to N.E.; heavy sea on now; Wairoa unapproachable. Confound "Lyttelton" and all such tubs. Don't you think I should send at once to acquaint Whitmore, *via* Taupo, of state of things?—and Herrick should perhaps start overland to-night for Wairoa, to make a movement towards Waikare-Moana at once with part of force, as a diversion in Whitmore's favour; otherwise, he may have all the Urewera and Te Waru's people concentrated at Ruatahuna, or attacking Whitmore's communications. Now Natives not going, there is no use of Herrick staying behind, losing valuable time. Herrick strongly approves of my proposal about pack-bullocks, to be eaten after delivering loads. I think I can quietly buy up a number at reasonable prices, and have cords put in their noses to lead them. They want no feed like horses, and saddles can be extemporised.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

Wellington, 27th April, 1869.

You had better send a messenger to Whitmore, and Herrick should go overland, but the movement of his column must be decided by himself and Richmond when he gets to Wairoa, and there sees what can be done. All depends on supplies.

HAULTAIN.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Col. HAULTAIN.

Napier, 28th April, 1869.

WIND appears holding firm from North, and Wairoa Bar will be all right by time steamer can go out. Herrick and I are off to Spit to see Captains of "Star" and "Ahuriri." Shall let you know presently any proposed arrangements. I think Herrick will now remain, and go by steamer, which would land everything to-morrow morning.

RUSSELL.

Telegraphic Conversation between the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN and Major HERRICK.

28th April, 1869.

Colonel Haultain.—Do you know what route you are to take from Wairoa?

Major Herrick.—By Te Rangi up the Ruaki-ture.

Colonel Haultain.—I can give you no instructions as I do not know Whitmore's plans, but you may have to turn off to Waikare-Moana if he is at Maungapowhatu before you, and drive the Hauhaus from that place. I hope you have got all the material that will be required. Have you sufficient officers; if not there is a Captain Coventry, who went from this by the last steamer, who might be employed. Set apart a good man to take charge of and be responsible for your camp equipage and tools, so that we may not have any great loss of these things. You will also require an officer to look after your pack-animals.

Major Herrick.—Captain Towgood went on from Mohaka with Richmond, and may be available for expedition. Coventry gone on to join Whitmore, may see him at Wairoa. I wish to take Ensign Davis, of Petane Militia, who volunteers for my campaign. Note your instructions.

Colonel Haultain.—Take Ensign Davis.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Wellington, 30th April, 1869.

I SEND telegram from Richmond. Did not get it till 1.30 owing to squalls with heavy rain preventing "Ahuriri" coming in. Immediately got Lambert to scrape together twenty-five rifles, and shipped them on board "Lyttelton," which I got off at 10 p.m. Weather then cleared up. "Lyttelton" could get into Wairoa River, this morning by daylight. When she may get out, another question. Looks threatening for a regular souther. "Ahuriri" sails about 11. Returns immediately, I hear. Are you coming up?

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 5th May, 1869.

"AHURIRI" will be here in about an hour. No tidings from Mohaka or Wairoa. If nothing comes by 2 o'clock, should we not send "Ahuriri" across to inquire if all is right there, and about "Lyttelton?"

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 5th May, 1869.

No word yet from Wairoa, either by steamer or land. People here a good deal excited in consequence. I should like to hear of Whitmore too. This sort of communication does not suit me at all.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

Wellington, 5th May, 1869—1.10 p.m.

Don't get uneasy; the Province is quite secure at present. Have you ascertained for me what Natives are supposed to be threatening you on the west?

HAULTAIN.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 6th April, 1869.

THANKS for your telegram, which has encouraged me a good deal. I assure you I am no alarmist, and in for utmost economy consistent with all due precautions against surprises. I am also jealous of the credit of the Government and anxious they should be free from unjust censure. No word yet from Wairoa or Mohaka. It is strange, but Richmond's silence can have no possible connection with interruption of intercourse between Napier, and Mohaka, and Wairoa, by the coast, for a whole week.

RUSSELL.

Major HERRICK to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Wairoa, 9th May, 1869.

MAJOR ROPATA now refuses to join my expedition to Waikare-Moana. Excuse, near approach of winter. Men would suffer much, in that high altitude, from exposure to cold, snow, and rain. Proposes to remain and garrison the town, but if Government urge him to proceed to front, he will return home with his men. Local Natives adopt similar argument, but will be guided by Ngatiporou movements. Altogether most annoying now, after wasting so much time, that at last moment they refuse to go. I will, meantime, endeavour to get practicable sledge-road from termination of canoe transport to lake, and send up material for raft and canoes. I will accompany with whatever men I can muster, and gain, if possible, Onepoto on this side lake. This, I think, I can accomplish with the small European force I now have at disposal, unless Te Kooti is in large force at this side of lake, which, from Colonel Whitmore's report, I don't think likely. If I can establish a post at Onepoto, it will be a great point gained. Quite evident that the sooner we are independent of Natives the better. No fixed plan of operations can be organized when they form the larger portion of one's force, particularly when they imagine one is dependent on them. Just possible that when Ropata and the Natives here actually see us start without them, they might feel ashamed of themselves and follow.

HERRICK.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 12th May, 1869.

HERRICK writes me, had my extracts Whitmore's despatches of 4th, from Fort Galatea. Wishes he had a hundred more whites to be independent of Natives, would push on to Onepoto, to give assistance to Whitmore. Force would be under 200 men; but as no more expected, would make attempt and attack Te Waru, whose fighting men he did not think exceeded forty. Richmond, Lambert, and I, are holding a council of war. You shall have result later.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 15th May, 1869.

DESPATCHES just come in from Wairoa and Mohaka. Been three days on road. Miserable work. Herrick writes from Wairoa on 12th. No mention of the attack on Richardson reported by "Sturt." Herrick says Ropata still obstinate, refusing to go with expedition, so only small force of Europeans available. Was in hopes Richmond would have been back, as his influence might induce them to start. He had just returned from the camp, which is now within eight miles of the lake. He is employing the men making roads, but last few days so unfavourable have not done much. Whatever happens he means to have a look at lake, and if possible to establish a post there; if he had 100 more men he might easily do it, but with present force, 135 available men, doesn't see very clearly. Could not leave less than 100 at lake to hold post, and should have only thirty-five left for escort: not enough. It should be sufficiently strong to fight its way to post, otherwise it might be left isolated, and starved out.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Hon. Mr. RICHMOND.

Wellington, 15th May, 1869.

SORRY to hear that Ropata still refuses to move on. Hope you will be able to persuade him, as very important to meet Whitmore if he reaches the lake. Cannot help you from this, and must leave all to your energy and judgment.

HAULTAIN.

Hon. J. C. RICHMOND to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 17th May, 1869.

I START by "Lord Ashley," at noon. Weather still and suitable for roadstead, Wairoa. "Sturt" left with sheep for Bay of Plenty at 1 a.m. yesterday, calling at Wairoa to deliver bullocks. "St. Kilda" for Mohaka, perhaps to take Natives and Armed Constabulary thence. Nothing now wanted except the few remaining Armed Constabulary from Petane and Wellington, and the pontoons tubes to deliver supplies for eight or ten weeks for 500 men. Heavy rain for several hours from 10 o'clock, now clearing off.

J. C. RICHMOND.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 18th May, 1869.

“ST. KILDA” from Wairoa last night, with Towgood. Natives did not move yesterday, on account of heavy rain. Will go to-day. Thirty Mohaka Natives ready to join Witty after we send him the men from here. He will then have force of about eighty men. Will go by Poutere and join Herrick at Onepoto. Witty had reconnoitred right up from Mohaka by Poutere and had communication with Herrick's camp, and seen no trace of Hauhaus. They must have gone to the Lake, probably crossed it. No pa at Putere, and if our Natives had gone as they promised, and the rebels had been followed up with vigour at the time they were laden with spoils, they might have been caught. “Wellington” just coming in. “St. Kilda” will go alongside and transfer men. Very cold but wind light, not much swell. Richmond's pontoons will be shipped about 2 p.m., and probably Wairoa will be accessible to-morrow morning.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 22nd May, 1869.

WHITMORE says Te Kooti is said to have 150 men at Titi Tiki on Waikare-Moana, but accounts differ as to food there. It is only just being dug up, and if plentiful must be all untouched. With the 100 men to be sent, and including Wittey's mixed reinforcement, say 45 men and the 25 marched yesterday for this, Herrick should have about 350 Europeans, exclusive of Wairoa Militia and Volunteers, say 50 men, and probably 200 Natives, namely, Ropata 100, Ihaka and Wairoa 70, Mohaka 30; say 500 altogether. Mostly good reliable men, and should be able to accomplish something on the lake as well as against Maungapowhatu ere long. It is annoying not being able to forward pontoons on account of landing. It will be Monday at soonest before they can be landed. I trust Herrick is making canoes near the lake; he took lots of tools for purpose. We must see about stores for Wairoa. The ten tons flour and biscuit, ex “Star,” is being now transhipped in harbour to “St. Kilda.”

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 24th May, 1869.

DESPATCH came in at 1 p.m. from Captain Bower, Wairoa. Reports as follows:—Lieut.-Colonel Herrick joined forces at front on 18th; they are now four miles in advance of Tukurangi, busily employed road-making. Frightful weather for some days past great hindrance. 120 Ngatiporou, with Hamlin, started on 19th; remained at blockhouse, Te Kapu, till 21st; at daybreak started for front. 100 Natives from Wairoa left latter place same day. Had not joined Herrick when he wrote on 21st. Team of bullocks, with sledge, etc., complete, gone to front with Naval Brigade and stores required by them. Also a boat; every effort will be made to get it on the lake. Sledges all ready for pontoons when they arrive. Herrick meant to make a movement onwards and take up fresh position to-day. Between Wairoa and the front there are 450 men, about half Europeans. A post at blockhouse, 15 men. Another at Te Ariki, 40 men. All this is satisfactory so far, but progress very slow.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 25th May, 1869.

BAR will do to-morrow; Pahia, Wairoa pilot here, says so. Do not detain steamer. Despatches last night from Herrick, of 18th and 20th. Had been steadily making roads, waiting advance of Natives, which had been deferred from wet weather. On 17th saw three of enemy's scouts close to our camp, which was at Tukurangi, about eight miles from Onepoto; they were coolly collecting corn—probably some of Te Waru's men. The men were in good spirits, but complained much of the cold. Camp much higher than the lake. Herrick thought there would not be much difficulty dragging canoes and rafts up, unless road in front much more uneven than in rear. He characteristically adds,—Nothing is impossible if we only make up one's mind to do it. On 20th Herrick again refers to continued bad weather. 110 Ngatiporous and 100 Wairoa Natives had started, and were expected in camp Saturday, and as enemy's fires were seen all over the opposite range, it was likely they would have some fighting on Sunday. Evident preparations were being made to oppose them at lake. With the large force at disposal Herrick did not anticipate any serious opposition to seizure of Onepoto. Heard that Maungapowhatu is only two days' march round the lake, but it can be considerably shortened by water transport. Had got a boat up as far as canoes came, and will take it with him when he advances. Canoe navigation only thing he is now doubtful of. Natives very slow in movements, and do not like water work this cold weather; pack-horses had been two days idle in consequence. If canoes fail, must resort to boats. Says he never had his patience so much tried, but is now resigned. Captain Withers had been made Field Adjutant, in which capacity he is most useful,—by far the most energetic officer in expedition. This is all. You must not remove Withers for the present. Could not Lambert act as Paymaster here?

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 25th May, 1869.

SIX p.m.—Despatch just come in from Herrick (by my new alternate days line), dated 23rd, 8 a.m., Tukurangi. He had received my despatch, with full information of Whitmore's movements, and his purpose to send 100 men round. Ngatiporou, as he finished his letter, were just in sight, struggling up the ranges. He was to wait an hour for them, and if they refused to march he would go without

them, as his whole European force had orders to march at daylight same morning, and were just starting, at 8 a.m., when Natives came in sight. They did not start till Wednesday, and took three days to march fifteen miles. Herrick had sent back to Ropata he had tested his patience beyond endurance, and he would go on without him. Ropata is said to be in a most sulky state, and displeased with Richmond from some cause, probably only a pretext for his political bias. 100 Wairoa Natives, who joined contingent, seemed altogether led by Ropata. Herrick expected to reach Te Kiwi on 23rd, within two miles of lake. Boat was to start on 4th on a sleigh from Tukurangi, and if any luck, should get to lake in two days. Weather looking threatening. If pontoons not up in time, Herrick would make a raft on the spot with split stuff. He heard there was plenty of timber on lake. Natives seemed good deal influenced by superstition about the autumn always sending down rain and snow to protect the Ureweras. Ensign Witty, with Mohaka party, sixty men in all, expected to join that day. I am sending despatches to St. George, Whitmore, and Herrick, at 10 p.m. this evening. Telegraph if you wish anything sent. In a P.S., dated 23rd, 11 a.m., I observe Herrick says Natives, 100 altogether, have at last arrived, and men in good spirits, and ready to go on. The last bugle has gone, so good bye. I will reach the Kiwi to-night.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 27th May, 1869.

SPLENDID morning—sea smooth as glass. “St. Kilda” arrived at anchorage last night, 9. Immediately I heard her gun I went to Spit, got pontoons on board with Mohi, Maori prisoner, and twenty-five Mohaka Natives, with two boat loads of potatoes and other provisions, given them by Tareha, and got steamer off again for Wairoa by 11.30. I went on board and saw the Ngatiporou chiefs, who are in good spirits.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 27th May, 1869.

DESPATCHES have just arrived from Major Herrick, dated 24th May, from Onepoto, on the lake. He left there at 6 a.m., Tuesday. He had at last reached Onepoto about noon that day, without any opposition. He could see the enemy's fires and their pa across the lake at Tiki Tiki, which appears to be about three miles off. He thinks distance can be considerably shortened by cutting a track round Panekeri Bluff, and getting opposite to it, but had not yet had time to reconnoitre. By the new and uneven appearance of the palisading round the pa at Tiki Tiki, the enemy is now evidently busy fortifying. Ropata and the Natives are now in good humour. Tiki Tiki Pa appears to be built on a spur or tongue of land running from one of the ranges down into the lake, which is about 200 yards from it. The palisading seems to connect the pah with water. This is probably to cover the approach to it. There is little doubt they intend making a stand there. Herrick regrets not having pontoons up. The road is precipitous and very bad in places, but can be made practicable for a sleigh with a little work. He hopes to have the boat up on Monday. The Naval Brigade is to commence sawing up timber as soon as they arrive with the punt. The pah being a strong one, it will be a great point to land as many men at the same time as possible. There is plenty of splendid timber here, chiefly Rimu. We are chiefly dependent on canoe navigation. The Natives have been more expeditious lately with their trips. Major Herrick describes the lake as most picturesque, but the country is of the most black and wretched kind; the soil is miserably poor. They found about a dozen horses, which were quickly secured. The road to Maungapohatu seems a succession of wooded ranges and ravines. Ensign Tupper had arrived with twenty-three men of the Armed Constabulary from Napier; they were rather foot-sore. Ihaka Whanga had also reached Wairoa with fifty picked men, and was to leave for the front with a force of Armed Constabulary to-day (Thursday).

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 29th May, 1869.

HERRICK writes from Waikare-Moana, 27th May, 1869:—“Ropata goes back to get more Natives. Please send the ‘St. Kilda’ up as soon as possible to Wairoa, where he will await her. Unless he is permitted to do this, he will, I fear, return with the men he has here at present. It will take me a fortnight before I can have my flotilla arrangements complete. I am going to build two boats 40 x 10, capable of holding each fifty men, and if I can get pontoons up I will thus be enabled to land 200 men at once. That will be of immense advantage. The canoe transport is now getting on well, but I fear much a good many of the pack-horses will break down, the food is so bad. The ‘St. Kilda’ will have to take Ropata to Tuparoa and bring him and his men back. I think he over-estimates the strength and capabilities of the enemy, but I suppose we must humour him if we wish to retain his services at all.—HERRICK.”

Captain Deighton writes me that the “St. Kilda” succeeded in landing all her pontoons safely, and part of her goods on the 27th. Bar a little rough, but expected to be all right yesterday. She would complete it at an early hour.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

Wellington, 29th May, 1869.

THE “Ahuriri” is only just signalled, 4.30 p.m., and will not therefore start till to-morrow at earliest.

I will send a six-pounder Armstrong gun by her for Herrick, and the "Sturt" will be able to take it on from Napier to Wairoa. I suppose Ropata will take advantage of "St. Kilda" and go to Tuparoa. Hold on to Henare Tomoana, we may want him, for we must not fail at Waikare for lack of a few men, and no doubt Urewera will muster strong at Tiki Tiki. The gun itself weighs 3 cwt., and ought not to be too much for a sleigh. I hope Whitmore will bring two or three of the small mortars in the "Sturt."

HAULTAIN.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 30th May, 1869.

MAJOR WITHERS just in from Waikare-Moana. Left same time as despatches telegraphed last night. Reports men very cheerful; weather has been very fine and their being huddled. Plenty firewood. Camp on banks of small lake and on edge of a bush. Commenced sawing timber for boats building, small boat within ten miles. "St. Kilda's" whaleboat going up also. Pontoons start to-morrow. Withers says twelve pack-horses must be sent forthwith or Commissariat will fail. Enemy appears numerous and busy. Are you sending lots of shell? Withers says round shot are no good. What about an artilleryman? Have you any in Wellington?—if not, we should get Sergeant Harper from Auckland by "Ahuriri." Attend to this. I shall send pack-horses overland at once. Withers says road to Wairoa very bad in places; wants five or six men for a fortnight to put it to rights. Provincial Government will do nothing. If not repaired, our communication cannot be kept up after rain sets in. Shall I get this done? Ropata went with Hamlin to select 100 to 150 men on Friday night. Took steamer all that time to discharge. "Sturt" had not arrived.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 4th June, 1869.

DESPATCHES from Herrick dated 1st, 9 a.m. Weather had been unpleasantly wet and damp for two days, and was raining heavily. Constant mist up there. Men making themselves tolerably comfortable, especially Natives, who had constructed elaborate whares in anticipation of snow and frost. Another large plantation of potatoes discovered by Ngatiporous on the 1st; had returned laden with them and some apples. Herrick proposes, if reconnoissance towards Putahi is favourable, to detach say 200 men to get round lake in that direction, so as to make a combined attack by sea and land, and thus cut off retreat. Regrets Whitmore could not get his Natives to come on to Waikare, as enemy must have been confined to their position by such movement; at present they can retire to Ruatahuna or Maungapowhatu. Does not think Ropata is favourable to your getting more men for West Coast, as he says we want all here. Boats and rafts progressing. Supplies kept well up.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 10th June, 1869.

HERRICK writes, 5th June, that place fixed on by him for a redoubt turns out to be *tapu'd*. Natives do not like disturbing it; old burial ground; they work at it as if afraid of some fearful disease in legs which will lay them prostrate. Compromised difficulty by proposing Natives should bring palisading and Pakehas would put it up. While Herrick wrote, an old fellow was making a speech about it. Has another boat as far as Te Kuri. Pontoons at end of canoe navigation, boats being sledged up. Roads getting fearfully cut up. Country thoroughly saturated with incessant rain. Enemy keeping himself very quiet; rarely see anything of him except his smoke, and occasionally a canoe or two. Trust they are not bolting. Only one fine day for last week. Two officers laid up with bad colds, and sent to Wairoa to recruit.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 10th June, 1869.

A DESPATCH from Herrick, dated the 5th. He is getting on all right, but incessant rains for a week make the roads bad. He says enemy is very quiet, and is afraid they may be bolting. We must look out on the Taupo line or we shall have more mischief. We must also look out for this Province by way of Patea.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 12th June, 1869.

DESPATCH just arrived from Herrick, dated 9th June. Nothing of importance to say. Getting on quick as possible with dragging up pontoons and boat-building. Rarely a fine day: either rain or mist. Potatoes exhausted. Finds men cannot work on pound of biscuit and pound of meat in that cold wet climate. No difficulty about transport of meat. Taken on himself to issue one and a half pounds meat. Richmond authorized extra biscuit, but better to give meat, saves transport. Says he himself eats considerably above pound of meat. Asks me to get authority for extra issue. Biscuit procured in Wellington much better than Auckland; stands packing better. Latter converted into powder when it reaches lake. Some flour got up can be used to advantage while stationary. One of the bullocks fell over cliff and was killed. Will not give extra meat, if can be helped, to these lazy Natives. They object to do any fatigue, and all work comes on Pakehas. I am sending off despatch to Herrick at six, with Whitmore's order to send guides (15) to Haroto forthwith. I have suggested that they might be

sent to ford opposite Putere, where Holloway, our scout, would meet them and show them road along Maungaharuru to Pohui. Shall inform Holloway to look out for them. Will save much time.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Colonel WHITMORE to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

19th June, 1869.

PLEASE send telegraph to Herrick with despatch. Te Kooti has been obliged to quit the difficult country, and has gone on the open plains. No longer same object in continuing your operations. Still, if in three days you feel able to cross and destroy kaingas and pas opposite, may do so. Government think a far better chance now at Taupo; holding a post with sixty Europeans, supplied for three months, at Onepoto, so as to defend your boats and enable you to cross, if we require hereafter, without such obstacles as you have encountered. Te Kooti must be at once attacked in the open country, and I wish you to select men, not necessarily the most active, but otherwise reliable, and to leave them under any good officer except those of No. 2 Division. I would prefer no men being taken of the Mounted or No. 2 Division. Ropata will receive option to go home or go to Taupo. I write his letter and send it enclosed to you, that you may decide whether you will come at once or try to cross before he reads the document. It is important to be soon at Taupo. I write fully by mail.

WHITMORE.

Hon. Colonel WHITMORE to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

(Forward to Colonel Herrick.)

20th June, 1869.

MY letters missed the mail. "Rangatira" leaves on Monday, when I shall write again. Do not be disappointed at temporary suspension of Lake operations, but leave material, whether ready or not, in safety, and provision a post for three or four months with, say, 120 rounds per man spare ammunition. Remove your head-quarters to Runanga as soon as possible. Fuller instructions will be sent.

WHITMORE.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to the Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 19th June, 1869.

RECEIVED despatches from Herrick, 14th June; had just received news of Opepe. Thinks it would be injudicious to take Richardson's troop away, or to weaken his force at present. Has only 260 A.C. to take field; rest holding posts and communications in rear. Must leave garrison of fifty men when crosses lake. Native force, though large, no good, except for a "come in at the death." Will not do fatigue or escort. Not to be trusted to hold any post. If any Europeans left, Natives would all leave. Wairoa Natives in great fright since orderly killed. Boats progressing favourably. Weather had been very bad, road dreadful. I am sending off Colonel Whitmore's telegram to Herrick, at 10 p.m. I think of running up to Wairoa in "St. Kilda" to-night, when she returns, and back on Sunday night, just to see what is going on, and for a little change.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, June 20, 1869.

DESPATCHES from Herrick this evening, dated evening 16th June. Guides ordered to march by Mohaka to Petane, which they should reach by Sunday, the 20th. Supplies getting very low: everything cleared out of Wairoa, and pack-horses at a stand still. Natives funk'd since orderly shot, that a party sent out with a few Europeans under Captain Handley, to scout country from where ambuscade was laid to the lake on Herrick's left, having seen, as they imagined, some signal fires in distance, refused to advance, though strongly urged by Handley. They returned to camp, and proposed to start next morning with reinforcements of Ngatiporou and others, and scour the whole bush. They marched again next morning with thirty Europeans. Reaching bush "the brave Ngatiporous" halted, and commenced deliberately firing into it, to disgust of Newland, in command. They then right-faced and returned to camp. Herrick says if these are the kind of men to fight our battles, God help us. He was to send Mohaka Natives again on 17th, with thirty whites, by another road to back of bush, with orders to Europeans to go on without Natives if they objected. Does not anticipate any number of enemy there; only scouting party, came across lake to cut off orderlies and small parties. All orderlies and supplies now come under strong escorts, which keeps men constantly on move. If Natives would do their share would not so much matter. Had, consequently on extra duties, to order up No. 2. Great disadvantage at present, there is no chief with any influence over Natives. Those acting as officers seem anxious to carry out Herrick's orders, but men will not obey. Trusts Ropata will soon return; he is implicitly obeyed. Herrick says his position is far from enviable; will see it through, however, whatever happens. Coventry had not reached as far as head-quarters. On hearing of orderly being shot, had immediately returned.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 23rd June, 1869.

SEVEN p.m.—Despatches from Wairoa just come in, dated the 21st. Heavy floods; communication with Herrick had been cut off for three days. "Grayling" and "Hero" cutters lost at Wairoa; former, total wreck, crew supposed lost; latter, cargo partially saved, crew saved. "Muriwai," full of stores for Government, driven off to Whangawehe. Captain Bower reports great scarcity of everything. Has some flour only. Afraid force at front badly off. 190 more Ngatiporous had

arrived on 14th, to increase the consumption. Reports bar as not likely to be passable for several days, wind being still southerly. Steamer will try it to-morrow morning; is still in Pot; captain will be here to-night; have you instructions.

RUSSELL.

Lieut.-Colonel HERRICK to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Waikare-Moana, June 25th, 1869.

I THINK it is a great pity to sacrifice this expedition after all the expense and trouble, and consider it a very great risk to leave garrison of sixty men here, knowing enemy to be on both flanks. In consequence of swollen state of river impossible to throw three months' supplies into garrison without considerable delay. Native opinion as well as mine, enemy will return here on seeing forces removed to Taupo. Think it wiser to destroy kaingas, &c., here first, and then make forced marches to Taupo with all available force. Think it my duty to represent this to you. Boats won't be completed before a fortnight. Will of course carry out Colonel Whitmore's instructions, and send two divisions at once to Taupo, but think it most injudicious. Don't anticipate doing enemy much damage, but will accomplish object of expedition.

HERRICK.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 27th June, 1869.

HERRICK's despatches, dated 25th June, reached me in the middle of night, by special express, part of only two days coming. Telegram for you from Herrick sent in letter to me; seems much disappointed at proposed suspension of operations now so far advanced. Thinks could soon destroy all kaingas and pas on lake; thinks sixty men on a post quite inadequate and dangerous. Enemy will be sure to return when bulk of forces removed to Taupo and not easily brought back; communication would be cut off and garrison placed in critical position; will take some time to leave post with three months' supplies, all reserve stock being exhausted; another flood would cause long delay before this could be done. Doubts if contractor would agree to supply so small a force with meat; very little feed about Onepoto for stock even if safe, and sheep would have to be driven up under escort in small numbers. Will endeavour, however, to carry out instructions with all possible speed; admits importance of reinforcing Taupo, but regrets sacrifice of punts, after all their labours at Waikare. In scouting on 25th on right flank came on tracks where about seven enemy had been two days before; they are evidently watching our movements. Mohaka Natives to have started for Putahi on Monday. New arrangement will upset this. Was going across on 26th in one of whaleboats to look at positions. Dislikes idea of going back without effecting anything. Will send No. 2 and mounted division to Taupo as soon as can throw sufficient supplies into post. Presumes will receive further instructions from Whitmore by post. Send telegram for you that it may be clearly understood he does not approve of alteration, and that he can't be taxed hereafter should circumstances make Government regret step now proposed to be taken.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, June 27th, 1869.

OWING to floods Herrick has not received my subsequent despatches of 19th, 20th, 21st, 22nd, and 23rd, with Whitmore's instructions subsequent to the 18th, giving more discretion as to time, if camp practicable; he got all these no doubt, and will, I dare say, prepare to make an attack while provisioning and strengthening post at lake, which will take a fortnight owing to recent bad weather. Ropata's letter shows wish to remain; also probable, from St. George's despatch yesterday from Taupuaeharuru, dated 25th, that Uriweras have gone back to Waikare, and will have to be fought there or give trouble soon. You got St. George's despatches, I suppose; I await instructions. Has St. Kilda arrived, and when does she return?

RUSSELL.

Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN to Hon. Mr. RUSSELL.

Wellington, 27th June, 1869.

TELL Herrick to remain and carry out the original plan of operations if he has reason to believe that the enemy are still in his front. If he determines to come away, he is not to leave any men behind. The new Ministry will probably be sworn in to-morrow, and I cannot say what their intentions as to military operations may be.

HAULTAIN.

TAUPO EXPEDITION.

Lieut.-Colonel ST. JOHN to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Tapuaeharuru, 8th June, 1869.—Pohui, 10th June, 1869.

THE cavalry escort, under Cornet Smith, at Opepe, where I went to inspect a proposed camping ground at this place, was surprised this morning. Number lost not yet known. The Messrs. Hallett, on their way to Napier from here, came on to two dead bodies stripped. Returning they met me. I sent St. George back to collect a few Natives, and I start again to-night, so as to reach there by daylight. I am in great hopes of most having escaped, as the two bodies were seen in a gully where my *tente d'abri* was, and the whares occupied by the men were on a rise separated from the bush by this gully.

Either treachery has been at work, or else this must be the work of a strong party moving from the Urewera country to Taupo. Messrs. Hallett report numerous tracks leading to Waitahanui, about fifteen miles from this, on the Lake.

ST. JOHN.

Lieut.-Colonel ST. JOHN to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Opepe, 8 a.m., 10th June. (Query. Messenger left on 9th.—Telegraphist).

HAVE found seven bodies. Names—Sergeant Slattery, volunteer troopers Charles Johnson, Charles Poictier, Joseph Bedois, Ernest Lawson, Gillian Hector Ross (both subalterns of Militia), John Cook. Te Kooti's letter, translation forwarded, says ten are killed, and one killed on the 8th. Tracks to Waitahanui show a very strong force. Bodies not mutilated. I return to Galatea to try and overtake the escaped, as they can have neither food nor blankets. The brothers Hallett have volunteered to take this on. Two more bodies found—Sergeant Dette* and Trooper Fred Gill. I have no time to write.

ST. JOHN.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 14th June, 1869.

LAMBERT had letters to-night, dated 11th and 12th, from Captain Birch, Patea, saying that Karaitiana (Patea) told him Te Kooti was at Tauranga, on the lake, with 300 fighting men, and women and children. Had killed one old man there, and burnt some whares. That he had killed the scouts at Opepe on his way from Ruatahuna. Was going to join the upper lake Hauhaus. Heu Heu and Kingi had gone to inform the Arawas of Te Kooti's whereabouts. That Hare Tauteku and his people had retired to Tauranga Riri (I do not know where that is, but think it is not far from Patea Gorge, on the Wangaeahu, down where Hare has a pa that I slept at), leaving Paurini and a few people to watch Te Kooti; that Hare was going off to Wanganui River to bring up some of his people. Hope Preece is in the "Sturt," should go up to Taupo at once to gain reliable information. We should hear from Paul Hapi to-morrow.

RUSSELL.

Lieut.-Colonel ST. JOHN to Hon. H. RUSSELL and Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Fort Galatea, 10th June, 1869.—Napier, 17th June, 1869.

RECEIVED your telegram of the 4th this day. Roberts, with 100 men, start to-morrow for Runanga. As I consider a smaller garrison to be in danger, they take with them ten days' rations. You must supply them from your side, as it is with the greatest difficulty I have managed to send on rations. I have only sixteen pack-horses, and the dray service has broken down. No oxen, and the horses bringing only five hundred pounds each trip from Fort Alfred to Fort Clarke. Heavy rain has delayed the making of the road. Despatches from Napier for me have been intercepted, and one of the orderlies killed; either Donald or Black. I think the service of orderlies would be safe if a post were at Arawhata, but I have not enough men to put a sufficient force there, and a small post would only invite attack. St. George goes with Roberts. No one else knows the country. Roberts is to take up post at junction of Patea and Opepe tracks.

ST. JOHN.

Lieut.-Colonel ST. JOHN to Hon. H. RUSSELL and Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 17th June, 1869.

11TH.—The Native pack-men have bolted with their horses; I therefore can send only six days' rations with Roberts. If you cannot supply him in time from your side he must return here. It is absolutely impossible for me to feed his detachment. This desertion has left me quite helpless, as far as transport goes. I am powerless to move up anything. Telegraph to him at once as to what he is to do—whether to remain or return. The orderlies will wait for an answer. Roberts is told to march on to the junction of tracks near Helyer's wool-shed.

ST. JOHN.

Captain ST. GEORGE to Hon. H. RUSSELL and Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Fort Galatea, 11th June, 1869.—Napier, 17th June, 1869.

THE last I received from you was 27th May. Your telegrams of 30th May and 1st June I have not received; orderly carrying them believed to be killed, and letters taken by Te Kooti; envelopes of letters seen on the track by later orderly. I marched up with Major Roberts to Runanga. I have protested to Lieut.-Colonel St. John about doing so, as I consider it of the utmost importance that I should return to Tapuaeharuru with a force of Arawa, as St. John cannot let me have any Pakeha. Tapuaeharuru is the key to Waikato *via* north end of the lake. Te Kooti has got the south end; Poihipi and others must give in if Te Kooti goes that way, if not supported. I believe they and the Ngatitahaha would be all right if supported at once. I have written to Civil Commissioner Clarke, Tauranga, for force of Arawa.

ST. GEORGE.

Lieut.-Colonel ST. JOHN and Captain ST. GEORGE to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Te Arawhata Tawhito, 11 p.m., 12th June.—Napier, 17th June, 1869.

MAJOR ROBERTS, three officers, myself, and fifteen men, A.C., are here (opposite Heru-iwi). Lieutenant Thompson and six men started from here this morning with telegrams for you. About ten miles from here, opposite Marinaru, he came across the tracks of about twenty-five of the enemy's

* Sergeant Dette has since reached Fort Galatea.

horse. Recognized the tracks of some of the horses as belonging to the men killed at Opepe. They had only passed a few minute, as the dung was still warm. Thompson halted for a few minutes, when he heard the voices of Natives coming up a valley, evidently following their cavalry. He then turned and galloped back here, and was sent on at once to Fort Galatea with the news. The enemy came from the direction of Opepe, and are the force (or part of) that went to Taupo the other day. We are about twenty miles from Galatea. Enemy evidently gone to Heru-iwi, six or seven miles from here. Most likely will attack some of the lower outposts if he is in force. I am inclined to think that it is only a party of cavalry sent out to intercept orderlies. Roberts stays here for orders. Orderly starts at daylight, so I write to-night.

ST. JOHN.

The two men who take this go up Rangiora. The short road *via* Maniania ought not to be taken by orderlies. A troop of cavalry would be invaluable; they would be able to turn the tables on the enemy; but they ought not to be used for any other purpose.

ST. GEORGE.

13th June, 10 p.m.

Orderlies started this morning with the telegrams, but returned afternoon, saying that they had fallen across eight of the enemy's cavalry. The few orderlies that are here are regularly frightened. However, I have got two (Raymond and Cook) to promise to start at midnight. I have told these men to get fresh horses wherever they can, and have given them a letter to this effect. If they succeed in delivering this telegram I hope that the Government will remember their services. Roberts has just got orders to return at once to Galatea. By letter from Galatea I find that the orderly that carried your letters to me of the 30th May and 1st June was killed by enemy. His fellow-orderly returned to Galatea yesterday, his horse having been shot under him. Some of enemy's cavalry at Heriwiwi, not certain about infantry.

ST. GEORGE.

Major LAMBERT to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 18th June, 1869.

TE HAROTO, 18th June, 1869.—Paul Hapi, with twenty men, thirty women and children, just arrived. He informs me that Te Kooti has killed six men and fifteen women and children of his people. I have given them provisions. Te Kooti is at Tauranga (Taupo). I have sent a party to Runanga for the purpose of ascertaining if the troops from Galatea, under Roberts, have arrived. It will not be safe to forward supplies until they appear. Napier Natives not arrived. I fancy we can do without them.

LAMBERT.

Captain ST. GEORGE to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

SIR,—

Tapuaehararu, 24th June, 1869.

I have the honor to send the following report. Te Kooti is now at Moerangi, a few miles from the southward of the Lake; he has only 100 men with him and intends to make a stand; he has sent letters to the Hauhaus and a few friendlies on the western shores, asking them to join him, but I hear they decline to do so. The King party are also against him, as far as I can make out. On his march up to the eastern shores he destroyed Te Hatepe and killed one man (perhaps two); he then went on to Tauranga (Taupo), where he stayed for some days, and the people of that place joined him. He then went on to Tokau and Waihi—I hear that he burnt those places. Hare Tauteka and Kingi bolted in the direction of Wanganui. Te Heu-Heu and Paurini joined him, perhaps were taken prisoners, but the general idea is that they joined willingly. They certainly could have got away if they had liked, as they were on board canoes ready to start when Te Kooti's messengers arrived at Waihi. From the Hatepe or Tauranga the Urewera portion of Te Kooti's force returned towards their own country. I fancy that they had a split. As far as I can make out there were about 100 Urewera: this was the party that I mentioned in my telegram of 13th instant. Hohepa Tamamutu and thirty men have gone round the Lake as far as Te Hatepe to look for stray friendlies that may be hanging about the kainga. They are to return to-night. I have now here sixty-three Taupos and 100 Ngatiwahakaue, I think a sufficiently large force to attack Moerangi; certainly large enough if they were Pakeha. If there had been a force here when Te Kooti was at Tauranga, we could have got round him completely by canoes. I have enough canoes to carry at least 100 men. I have just heard that 100 more Arawas are on their way up. I have received nothing from you since your telegram dated (I think) the 4th instant. My telegrams of 12th and 13th instant were the last I have sent. I fear the return of the force from the Arawhata to fort. I went round *via* Maketu and Rotorua to get people to come to the assistance of Taupo. There is one orderly here now belonging to the Tauranga side, and I am obliged to send him on with this. The great difficulty is orderlies; Maoris are of little use, they often will call at a kainga on their way, and stay two or three days; and besides, they would not travel the road now. One Pakeha orderly that I had refused to go. The men who took my telegrams of 12th and 13th were fired on at Tearawhatahou, and came on here; one of them (Raymond) got a fresh horse, and started on the evening of the 16th. I only heard this two days ago at Rotorua; till then I thought that they had got through all right.

25th, morning.—This letter was to have started last night, but no horse could be got. A prisoner escaped from Te Kooti came in this morning. He says that Te Kooti is on his way now to attack this place; he comes *via* the western side of the Lake and past Oruanui. We are all right if he does attack, and do not want any help.

In haste.

ST. GEORGE.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 26th June, 1869.

I SEND abstract of Stevenson's reports of Opepe affair. You will observe the Natives are said to have been well clothed; this would lead to conclusion that these were the party who plundered Hudson's

store at Mohaka. I send also account of Cornet Smith's escape, which I took from Captain Birch's statement to me. "George Stevenson, trooper in Opotiki Cavalry, came into Galatea about 4.30 p.m., Tuesday, 8th June. States that about 3 p.m. of the 7th he was with Cornet Smith and party of cavalry encamped at Opepe. It was raining; men were lying in the whares. Two or three armed Natives came up, saluted as friendly, said 'Tena koe.' Said they thought we were Hauhaus. One of our men spoke to them; they said they were Maoris from the Lake. Not knowing we were Pakehas, had come up armed. There were four or five of them close to the whares. Being suspicious, I went outside, and seeing some more coming up in skirmishing order, I went to get my arms. One of the Maoris put his gun at full cock in front of my whare door, and, pointing it at me, I turned to go into another whare, when he fired at me. I then tried to enter. Another man fired at me with his double-barrelled gun. I ran for the bush, and saw no more of it. Sergeant Dette and Leary came in at same time. I heard heavy firing all the time, and believe all were shot but us three. The Maoris got round between us and the whares, and fired heavily. They were about seventy or eighty, as nearly as I could judge, and were well clothed. We got out of the bush before dark, and came straight to Galatea. I saw no tracks along the road. We could not get our guns to defend ourselves."

RUSSELL.

Mr. H. T. CLARKE to Hon. J. C. RICHMOND.

Napier, 28th June, 1869.

Six p.m., 24th June, 1869.—Natives quiet at Tauranga, but friendly Natives uneasy; talk of making preparations for defence; building pas. Waikato chiefs returned from Kati Kati; their object was to establish friendly relations with Ngaiterangi, for them to separate from us, to leave Europeans to themselves: deeply politic, but very dangerous. Heard from Rotorua; Waikato influence at work among the Arawas; a peace mission to Ngatiraukawa just reported; Dr. Nesbitt is at Ohinemutu; no communication yet on the subject. Captain St. George gone to Taupo with Arawas, to assist Te Poihipi. Te Kooti's force said to be 180 men, foot, seventy horse; being reinforced from South Taupo. Heu Heu and Paurini said to be prisoners. Hare and others escaped. Letters from Colonel St. John this morning, date 21st, 10 p.m.; 1st and 6th Division Armed Constabulary mutinied; will not proceed to Runanga and Haroto; will not work. Colonel St. John says will try and push through with sixty men: great risk to run. Tauranga disaffected Natives—horses again; stole one from Archdeacon Brown; sent for it; refuse unless £10 given. Have requested Captain Fairchild to lose no time to go to Napier; I want instructions about Taupo. The force at this place ought to be increased; to keep peace ought to be prepared for war. Captain H.M.S. "Virago" will only take women and children.

H. T. CLARKE.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 28th June, 1869.

CAPTAIN FAIRCHILD reports he called at Opotiki, and was told by Captain Walker that the Hauhaus (about twelve in number) had fired on some of Marsh the Arawa chief's men at Ohiwa, on 25th. Walker apparently not alarmed. Called at Te Kaha Point, and also at Poverty Bay; all quiet there, as well as at Opotiki.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 28th June, 1869.

CAPTAIN HEMPTON writes me, 24th, about state of force. Says transport was very defective when he was at front last week, but Napier bullocks may put things on better footing. Does not see how St. John can do more than hold his posts; says nothing effectual will be done without more men, and that small failures produce bad effect on friendlies; we must have more mounted men to move quickly, but says horses must have something more than "wi" grass to live on in winter. Moorsom's troop have greatly diminished, as horses were all done up for want of feed. Captain Collins writes, 25th:—Has written Colonel Whitmore by this mail for supply of sheep; on hand about 100; butcher has applied for 200, but thinks 300 if not 400 should be sent. Roper, the shepherd, has returned to Napier by "Sturt." Entered into new arrangement with Collins to return in charge of sheep at 7s. per day for self and horse, with rations for himself, but none for horse. Mitchell, surveyor, who returned per "Sturt," says military chest by no means safe at Matata. St. John writes from Galatea, 21st; repeats particulars about men's behaviour, and regrets he cannot stir a peg; is very unhappy about state of things and forced inaction when there was a chance of doing something; fears desertion; sees men will not work in a winter campaign here; refusal to do duty preconcerted affair; powerless to enforce order; thinks it would be better if men had 2s. 6d. per day, increasing rations, and giving them a ration of rum—would be better satisfied. 200 men refuse to march or do fatigues; rest, except ninety, are sick; how long ninety may remain staunch cannot say. Smaller divisions on regimental system of companies better. Cornet Smith recognised some of the Opotiki Natives among Kooti's band at Opepe. Expects Birch back in six days. Would have gone on himself with sixty men if could have seen his way to leave posts secure. Collins reports three of Napier bullocks died from tutu first night; one more missing, and supposed dead; had scraped up some other bullocks; sent on two teams of eight each to front; afraid they will soon be unserviceable for want of feed.

RUSSELL.

Hon. Mr. RUSSELL to Hon. Colonel HAULTAIN.

Napier, 28th June, 1869.

FIVE p.m.—Orderly just arrived from Patea. Letter from Mr. Birch states he had been, on 23rd, to Hatepa Falls where Hare Tauteka and his people are staying. Confirms report that Te Kooti has left Tauranga, and is at Moreangi, west side of lake; has taken Te Heu Heu and Paurini, with nearly all the people who had remained at Tokanu, prisoners; some got away from Tokanu, and are now with Hare's people. Te Kooti wrote to them to join him; did not kill any, but tried to prevent escape. Greater part of Taupo Hauhaus joined Te Kooti—not all. Rest waiting decision of King. Te Kooti said his people might go further into King's country, or come this way, viz., Patea. Hare expecting news from Wanganui Natives every day. Messengers sent had not yet returned. Are very anxious to get assistance and arms in case of attack. Without assistance, even if armed, would not be able to stand. Appear not only willing but anxious to fight Te Kooti. If caught, would probably be compelled to join him. Lament very much loss of land, horses, cattle, &c., which they say Te Kooti has taken. Asked what Government would do for them, and have written me two letters asking arms and help. They have also written to Renata. Orderly returns on Wednesday morning.

RUSSELL.

Mr. RHODES to Hon. D. McLEAN.

Napier, 29th June, 1869.

THE Orderly from Patea. Birch's place went last night. He confirms the news from Taupo. Te Kooti on the west side Taupo Lake.

RHODES.

Hon. D. McLEAN to Captain St. GEORGE.

Wellington, 4th July, 1869.

SEND news from Taupo. Where are friendly Natives, are they concentrated? Is Te Kooti at Taupo, and where? What force has he? Where is Poihipi? Is Heu Heu a prisoner? When did you hear from Fort Galatea?

McLEAN.

Captain St. GEORGE to Hon. D. McLEAN.

Pohui, 4th July, 1869.

KOOTI's head-quarters at Moerangi, fifteen miles south end of lake. His scouts seen within two miles of Tapuaeharuru three days ago. He has found out that there is a garrison of Arawa at Tapuaeharuru, so he has not attacked the place as expected. I have 100 Arawa and about the same number Taupos. I am very short of food, nothing but potatoes, and not many of them. Arawas calling out for food. I fear that they will be obliged to leave if they don't get food shortly, and then I cannot trust Taupos to hold out. Te Kooti is sure to attack if Arawas leave. Te Kooti has about 150 of his own men, and has been joined by some Taupo Natives. Te Heu Heu and Paurini with him—perhaps prisoners. The general impression is that they joined him. The Taupos are quarrelling a good deal among themselves. If the Arawas leave they (the Taupos) will not stay altogether. Te Kooti is sure to attack if Arawas leave. As far as I can learn, the western Hauhaus are not inclined to help Te Kooti, however they must join him if a force is not kept at Tapuaeharuru. If you will give me fifty men as a garrison, and fifteen men for commissariat work, and fifteen pack-horses, I would keep them provisioned from Maketu. Six days after the force is at Maketu I will have them at Tapuaeharuru. The commissariat force that I mention will be sufficient, as I shall take the road through the Arawa country. I have already telegraphed this to Mr. Ormond.

ST. GEORGE.

FURTHER PAPERS RELATIVE TO MILITARY OPERATIONS AGAINST THE REBEL NATIVES.

EXTRACT from Captain ST. GEORGE'S DIARY, dated 15th June, 1869, relative to Mutiny at
Fort Galatea.

BEFORE I left Galatea this morning, Nos. 1 and 6 fell in of their own accord, and refused to do any more work without they had more rations given them. Certainly the 1 lb. of biscuit and $\frac{1}{2}$ lb. of bacon is not enough to live upon. I ate all yesterday, in one meal, my whole day's rations. Altogether the Constabulary, officers and men, are in a very dissatisfied state. * * * *

EXTRACT from a Letter of Colonel ST. JOHN'S, reporting Mutiny in the Camp at Fort Galatea.
Fort Galatea, 17th June, 1869.

I REGRET to have to inform you that the spirit of discontent with respect to the rations has broken out in mutiny at this post. * * * *

The men had refused to do the fatigue duty unless their ration was increased.

This morning early I had a general parade to give the division a chance of returning to its duty. I informed the men that their request for an increased ration had been forwarded, and warned them that nothing but punishment awaited those who would not obey orders. The fatigue bugle sounded afterwards, and not a man of the division but a couple of non-commissioned officers appeared. I then had a roll-call of the men of the division whose turn it was for fatigue, and found the number absent as per margin. The non-commissioned officers I have placed under arrest, but the number of 1 Sergeant, constables is too large to confine. If I had the authority I would at once make an example by 5 Corporals, assembling a General Court-Martial and trying the non-commissioned officers and every tenth man of 41 Constables. the malcontents. I fear, however, that the mischief doesn't end here. * * *

Copy of a Letter from Colonel ST. JOHN reporting prevalence of sickness in the force under his
command.

SIR,—

Fort Galatea, 17th June, 1869.

I have the honour to inform you that sickness is very prevalent in the force under my command, as you will see by the enclosed return.

No. of sick—56.

The disease is chiefly rheumatism and cold, but Dr. Brown reports that there are still a number of men in the force perfectly unfit for service, and who ought never to have been passed into it.

I have directed him to send me a nominal return of these men.

I have, &c.,

The Hon. Colonel Whitmore,
Commanding Colonial Forces.

J. H. ST. JOHN, Lieut.-Colonel.

EXTRACT from a Telegram from Mr. Civil Commissioner CLARKE to the Hon. J. C. RICHMOND.
Napier, 24th June, 1869.

* * * * *
LETTERS from Colonel St. John this morning, date 21st, ten p.m., first and sixth Divisions A.C. mutinied; will not proceed to Runanga and Haroto. Will not work. Colonel St. John says will try and push through with sixty (60) men—great risk to run. * * *

H. T. CLARKE, Civil Commissioner.

Copy of a Letter from Mr. G. S. COOPER to Lieut-Colonel HARINGTON.

(No. 373.)

SIR,—

Colonial Defence Office. Wellington, July 16th, 1869.

I am instructed by the Minister for Colonial Defence to request that you will state for the information of the Government the circumstances which in your judgment rendered it desirable that you should quit your command and come to Wellington at the present time.

I have, &c.,

Lieut.-Colonel Harington, &c., &c.
Wellington.

G. S. COOPER,
Acting Under Secretary.

Copy of a Letter from Colonel HARINGTON relative to the disorganized state of the Field Forces
at the Bay of Plenty.

SIR,—

Wellington, 16th July, 1869.

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter, No. 373-3D, of this day's date, requesting me "to state for the information of the Government, the circumstances which rendered it

desirable that I should quit my command and come to Wellington at the present time," and beg to acquaint you, for the information of the Honorable Defence Minister, with the following facts.

On the 26th of June, I received a letter from the Officer commanding at Matata, informing me that twelve men of the Armed Constabulary had deserted from Fort Clarke, and requesting me to take steps for their apprehension if they attempted to escape by Tauranga. Three of these men were apprehended on board the vessel sailing that night for Auckland, and were placed in the guardroom.

On being brought before me I asked them why they had deserted at a time when the country was in want of men, when they replied that they were thoroughly tired of serving in the force, and preferred the risk of a very severe punishment to remaining. They complained that they were most insufficiently fed; that they did not receive their pay in accordance with the terms under which they enlisted; that they therefore were not in a position to buy clothes and extra food, and especially, that they were not well cared for when sick. They also informed me that there was a general impression amongst the men that they were badly treated, and that the result of it would be desertion in very large numbers. Having lately returned from Fort Galatea, to which post I went on receipt of the news of the Opepe murders, I knew from personal observation that there was a great deal of truth in their statement. This opinion was confirmed in my mind by what the sergeant of the escort told me, as he was an old soldier, and had served in the 43rd Regiment at Tauranga, when I was in command of the 1st Waikato Regiment at that post four years ago.

The deserters told me most distinctly, that if some measures were not speedily adopted for the amelioration of the condition of the Force, that the men would mutiny and desert in large numbers.

I consulted with Mr. Clarke, Native Commissioner, on the subject, and decided that as communication was so very infrequent owing to the total absence of any steamers calling at Tauranga, I ought at once to proceed to Wellington and tell the Government candidly the actual state of the Force, and the probable result if some alteration was not made.

I went to Auckland and informed the Hon. Dr. Pollen, who thought it advisable that I should act as I had suggested.

G. S. Cooper, Esq., Acting Under Secretary,
Defence Office.

I have, &c.,

PHILIP HARINGTON, Lieut.-Colonel,
Commanding Tauranga District.

EXTRACT from a Letter from Lieut.-Colonel HARINGTON to the Hon. the DEFENCE MINISTER.

SIR,—

Wellington. 17th July, 1869.

* * * * *
"I deem it my duty to recommend that the posts at Forts Galatea, Clarke, and Alfred should be abandoned, as the retention of them entails considerable expense in transport, &c., without any positive advantage to us." * * * * *

PHILIP HARINGTON, Lieut.-Colonel,
Commanding Tauranga District.

EXTRACT from a Telegram from Lieut.-Colonel ST. JOHN to J. D. ORMOND, Esq.

Haroto, 16th July, 1869.

* * * * *
"If Galatea is given up, Fort Clarke must go too. Then Fort Alfred is of little use, the provisioning of it by boats being exposed to attack. If Galatea and Clarke are given up, Fort Alfred ought to have 200 garrison; Matata not less than 60. Kokohinau Natives are not to be trusted. For defence, line is useless. Intended for operations on Taupo with Matata as a base. For other purposes it is weakness." * * * * *

H. ST. JOHN, Lieut.-Colonel.

EXTRACT from a Letter from Lieut.-Colonel HARINGTON to the Hon. the DEFENCE MINISTER,
being the latest intelligence from the Tauranga District.

Tauranga, August 6, 1869.

* * * * *
"It is absolutely necessary that the Constabulary should be kept together for some little time, as they are quite ignorant of their duties and require a thorough re-organization. All their arms, accoutrements, &c., require a thoroughly careful inspection, many of them being entirely unfit for service, and the men are in many instances without clothing." * * * * *

PHILIP HARINGTON, Lieut.-Colonel,
Commanding Field Force, Bay of Plenty District.